

# FALLING FOR A GANG LEADER

## Short Introduction

Hello

Thank you for deciding to read my story ,I hope you guys will enjoy it

Main character:Alona Ngema

The story revolves around her .

17 years of age ,turning 18 in a couple of months

She has black hair that reaches below her back

Pink plump lips along with big midnight black

eyes

light skin

Abit on the skinny side and her short frame isn't helping either .

Lives with her mom only, her 20 year old brother ( Ozamokuhle) appears later on in the story.

Romeo is her gay guy best friend.

Enzo is Alona's boyfriend

And then there's Reece, you'll find out about him and the relationship between him and Alona later on .

You'll meet some characters as the story goes

Never been good with Introductions, forgive me.

If the Story Is or Is not fiction

You'll find out later

And if the story is written by the author of DOB  
or not.

You'll also find out later

Any questions ?

[11/08, 08:03] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 1

I have accepted the fact that he came into my  
life that night. That I wasn't supposed to be  
there but I guess It was fate.

If only Fate had passed me by

Friday night around 9 and I couldn't sleep as I kept tossing and turning .

I decided to go for a run.

I usually run early in the morning on weekdays before I go to school, but now I just craved for a run beside the fact that i couldn't sleep.

Call me crazy and blah blah blah, I was already halfway out the door anyway.

The neighborhood I was living in was pretty safe or so I thought

Turning a corner, stopping to catch a breath and taking a look at my surroundings , I have never been on this side of the street and It was awfully quiet, I could here the rapid breathing of my heart

Deciding to just turn around and head back home.

Straight ahead I could see two hooded figures, heading my way.

Okay don't freak out

They are just passing by

Stay calm

Breath in

Breath out

Starting to jog back, staying out of their lane, they are the ones to block my way. Bumping

into a hard chest I quickly mumble 'sorry' before looking up to who I bumped into, it was a tall muscular guy .

Him: No worries Baby girl

He smirks, the way he said it sent shivers down my spine.

Side stepping him to leave but his other friend blocks my way

Grabbing my arm tightly he pulls me back.

I now begin to panic

Guy 1: And where do you think you going ?

Me: I..i-im heading home

Guy 1: How about usikhaphe siye eKhistin yethu and we can have a good time

He asked in a way that says I dare you to say no. My eyes trailed to his finger that was rested on top of something, fingers lightly touching it.

A gun

Me: I don't think so.-I have a boyfriend and I..

Cutting me short

Guy 2: He didn't ask you if you had a boyfriend or not .

Guy 1:I asked if you want to have a good time with my friend and I.

Good time only meant one thing at this moment,I know what their intentions were

Me: Ple-please I just want to get home

Looking around frantically for at least to spot someone to help me but there was no one in sight

.

He pushed me back, making me fall down as they hovered over me

Me: Please don't,you can't do this

I started screaming and tried getting up but the other guy kicked my side.

Guy 1: There is no use fighting, I.. We get what we want and at this moment it's you we want! Zola.

That's all it took for his friend who I just found out his name is Zola to start forcing my legs apart, putting his knee on my stomach to get me to stay in place as he struggled to take off my vest.

This is not happening, this was not how I was planning to lose my virginity, this is not actually happening, it's just a dream. oh how I wish that it was dream a bad dream than for it to be actually happening

I was forced back to reality as he back slapped me ,it hurt but it didn't stop me from screaming and twisting my body to get out of his grip

Me: Please do-don't.



I continued to beg with tears clouding my vision as I started to cry.

Zola: Shh baby girl, sizokwenza uzive mnandi (we going to make you feel good)

Me: STOP!

I screamed out louder praying that maybe someone can hear me, for goodness sake this is a township, what happened to the nosy neighbors all of a sudden ?

He was trying to feel on my breasts

Me: GET YOUR HANDS OFF ME!

I managed to Knee him on his stomach causing him to roll over and let go of me

Zola: you are going to pay for that you stupid bitch.

I was really stupid, I mean what was I doing outside at this time of the night .

Oh I was going for a run because I couldn't

sleep and I thought It was safe nothing could happen.

I was slapped again,making my lip split and I could feel it numbs as blood started coming out

Guy 1: We won't go easy on you.

He said as he helped his friend,holding both my arms above my head

Guy 1: Stop moving you little bitch !

Shaking my head, focusing on fighting for myself to not get raped.

I could swear I could hear a car approach then screeching tires

Then someone screaming

"What the fuck do you think you doing ?"

The strange voice asked but I don't really know what else they were saying since I felt light headed.

The weight on top of my body was suddenly

lifted off me and I could hear the two guys groaning in pain as the stranger fought them,punching them repeatedly  
I felt dizzy and sleepy.

"Hey,It's alright ..you safe now " the stranger tells me in a deep ,slow voice holding me to his chest.

After struggling to look up for a few seconds as my eyes felt heavy, I finally look at him.

I couldn't really see him but I couldn't help noticing the small nose ring on his nose.

I whispered a Thank you before I blacked out .

\*\*\*\*\*

I woke up, trying to jump out of the bed regretting it as I started having a headache.

" You awake"

Turning quickly to find the source of voice .

A Tall guy leaning on a door frame In a pair of track pants, his arms crossed on his bare muscular chest that's covered with tattoos.

I've never seen alot of tattoos before.

He was in his early 20's

He had silver white hair, deep curls, hair cut on the sides. Midnight black eyes with long thick eyelashes

Thick eyebrows trimmed with two lines on the ends while the other eyebrow had a piercing in.

Another piercing on his lower lip ,pink lips he had that I couldn't help noticing

And Another piercing on the nose, the one I've

seen before I blacked out.

I could go on and on about his handsome features ,but I need to get back to the story.

Something about him screamed danger .

He smirked at me revealing his deep dimples,a 10c coin could actually fit in them

He caught me checking him out,well you couldn't blame me.The guy was Hot,Light skinned with a bit of a tan and a strong jaw that I wa...here I go again ,forgive me.

Focus Alona,Focus.

You just woke up in a unfamiliar room.

In someone else's bed.

And now that someone was watching you like a predator watching it's prey.

Him: Are you alright ?

He asked in His low deep voice.

Me: I have a headache and I feel like I-I..

I trailed off, Stop the chit chat Alona you have to get home ! Said ny inner voice said

Me: Where am I ?, How did I get here, what did you do to me ?

I asked in one breath taking the blankets off me as I inspected myself, I was Ok except for my sore ribs , from the kicks I took the previous night

Him: You don't know me yet you think that low of me ?

His low almost inaudible deep voice asked.

He shook his head as his jaw twitched.

I was pissing him off

Me: I-I'm sorry,I didn't mean it it's just after what happened yesterday, They sexually assaulted me They were close to r..

I couldn't say the word

I stopped talking letting out a shaky breath, tears almost clouding my vision once again

Me: I don't really remember what happened and now I wake up in an unfamiliar room.

He just Ignored my pity party,Pointing at a glass door

Him: Everything you need is in that bathroom,Freshen up ,I'll drive you home.

With that he turns around and leaves me.

That was cold

I got up and went in the bathroom ,So big my

bedroom was nothing compared to it.

It was beautiful,like one of those 5 star hotel bathrooms I usually see on Tv.

This guy was surely loaded.

I got in and did my business and when I was done I wore some clothes that were neatly folded on top of the bathrooms table, some tights and a shirt which I found myself comfortable in.

Making sure everything was as I found it before going out.

Getting in the room,the bed was made and he was standing in the middle of the room typing away on his phone .

I clear my throat as to get his attention,he ignores me

Me: I'm done.

Him: Follow me



We leave the room with me following behind him,gawking at this huge house Beautiful it was.

After a few minutes of driving and me giving him the directions to my house,I ask him to park 2 houses away

I was about to thank him when he just told me to get out.

Not saying anything I just nod and get out mumbling a quiet thank you anyway .

I walk home and I could feel eyes on me but I didn't pay no mind as my 6 room house came into view,I let out a breath as a small smile plays on my face

I was safe.

Knowing my mom was probably asleep.

She always worked late night hours and she'd come back earlier in morning around 5 am

She gets back tired so she sleeps while I get up to get ready for school .

I retrieve my key under the plant pot and get in quietly as possible.

I tip toe to my room but get the shock of my life when I see mom sitting by the sitting room drinking a hot cup of coffee

Her: Usukaphi ? ( Where are you coming from )

She takes in my appearance.

I was wearing a guys t-shirt after all.

So imagine the look on her face

She looks at my face, concern masks her once angry face.

she looks at my busted lip, 3 black finger marks on my light skin face from the two slaps I got.

Puffy red eyes and a band aid on the side of my

neck,it hid a scratch mark as I was also strangled.

I looked like a complete mess right now that is what I know as I have had already checked myself out in the mirror back in his House .

I begin telling her my story...

[11/08, 09:07] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 2

I Spent most of the weekend locked up in my room.

My mom was worried about me,she wanted to take a two days off just to be with me but I told her that I'm okay and I wanted to be alone

She offered to book me in for therapy but I refused telling her I wanted to forget that it even happened.

She let me be and told me to not be afraid to

open up to her if I needed someone to talk to.

I wanted to be alone so my phone has been switched off all weekend not wanting to talk to anyone,including my gay guy best friend nor my boyfriend.

Woke up Monday morning getting ready for school.

The bruises on my face were slowly fading,I didn't wear makeup so they were visible for everyone to see and I wasn't going to cover them up.

I just had to come up with a believable story.

\*\*\*\*\*

Making my way to my class I greet some of my friends as I pass them.

I'm a bit quiet and shy and don't consider

myself popular even though I was pretty and hot -I see you rolling your eyes - and that I was dating one of the popular guys in school. I was just chilled.

I was suddenly pushed against a wall and the person pins me with their body against a wall.

"Damn you're hot I can't wait to get you alone"

A voice whispers in my ear and I start panicking

Me: Please Ple-..don't

I begin to beg.

They found me.

"Alona..it's me Enzo,you okay ? Please look at me "

Me: E- Enzo

I clear my throat

Enzo: Yeah ndim,who did you think it was?

He chuckles as he brings me to his chest holding me tight,I missed him

I didn't say anything just held him close

He pulled away,looking at me

Enzo: What the hell happened to your cheek ?

Me: Nothing. I-I got in a..uhm argument with mom ,it was really bad that she ended up slapping me

I lied,I couldn't tell him the truth.

He looked at me raising his eyebrow like he didn't believe me

Him: You sure you not lying to me ?

I shook my head

Me: I swear I'm not ,I had a nightmare last night and it's stuck on my mind. You just took me by surprise that's all,actually thought it was the guy from my nightmare

I chuckled..continuing to lie

He smiles a little

Him: You've always been crazy.

The bell rings indicating first period.

He pecks my lips

Him: Come on lets get you to class.

Intertwining our hands together he walks me to class ready to start my day.

The day went by pretty fast,with the feeling that someone was watching me but I paid no mind

It was after school and I was walking with my friend

Romeo who I have been trying to avoid all day,he caught up with me on 6th period and he

was asking me questions about what happened to me this weekend that I was avoiding him and I came back looking like shit,yeah he was blunt like that

he says whatever 's on his mind and he didn't care how you were going to take it,I was used to him by now

Him: Are you in a abusive relationship ?

Ignore him

Him: Oh my god ,Is it Enzo that gave you those bruises ?

Just Ignore him

Him: I'm going to kill that son of a-a ,I can't swear



I chuckle

Me: You never fail to amuse me

Him: Yeah I know, stop trying to change the subject

Me: Enzo would never hurt me

Him: Then w-

Right when he was going to talk, we both turned around at the sound of a car pulling by at the other side of the road.

Everyone was gawking at the car as two guys got out

Romeo: Who are they ?

Me: Have no idea

I responded mesmerized by the car

These guys got the whole students attention, who would blame them

They were pretty hot

Alona! You have a boyfriend for god sake,my inner voice scolds me.

I noticed the very tall guy in a leather jacket,dark jeans and combat boots searching the crowd before his eyes met mine

I gasped..he was the guy who saved me from my attackers Friday night, why is he here ?

I stare back at him then turn to leave when I saw him wink his eye at me with a smirk.

25 minutes later

Romeo and me are now sitting at McDonald's waiting for our order.

We usually bought lunch here sometimes when

we managed to dodge out of the school premises,It wasn't far.

After ten minutes of waiting,our order arrives  
Burger and fries we pay and part ways.

I was on my way to the taxi rank when I noticed the two guys that were at school few minutes ago .

I tried to look anywhere but them but curiosity got the best of me and right then

I heard the other one ask

"Is that her ?,she's fine as fuck "

The one who saved me two days back looked my way.

Our gazes lock making me nervous,I couldn't help but look at his Rare Light brown eyes,they held so much mystery

He stared back at me and smirked then once again winked at me,It took me by surprise.

I don't know what his deal was because the last time I was with him,he was actually cold towards me .

I continued with my way,Not paying attention to where I was going I bump into someone,only thing I seem to be doing lately

Me: I'm so sorry

Looking up at the person I bumped into,He was looking down at me

Him: So we meet again

I look up at the guy who saved,bear with me I don't know his name.

I just stare at him

Him: Already forgot me princess ?

Me: Princess ?

He lets out a deep throaty chuckle

Him: I'm ready to collect what you owe me for saving your life princess.

With that he traces my cheek with the back of his hand

Me: W-What do you mean I owe you ?

Him: I was the one who stopped those fuckers from forcing themselves on you so I think I deserve a payment don't you think ?

Me: What ?

To say I was shocked was an understatement, I moved away from him.

Him: You owe me from helping you get those bastards to back off

Me: I'm not stupid I got what you said I just don't understand why I owe you for helping me.

Excuse me I really need to leave

He grabs me by my arm as I attempt to pass him

Him: Don't you dare walk away from me, No one walks away from me okay ?

I quickly nod

Him: like I was saying, my payment ?

Shaking my head in disbelief, I don't say anything

Looking up at him with watery eyes.

Me: What do you want from a 17 year old ? I-I don't have money, I..

Him: Do I look like I'm in need of money ?

I shook my head, trying so hard not to cry.

This guy was scaring me

Him: Lets discuss this some other day,you need to get home and I need to get somewhere

I try to side step him,he grabs my wrist

Him: This is not over princess,let me give you a ride home

Me: No thanks I'll be fine,I don't want to Owe you again

Him: I wasn't asking you

He takes my wrist and walks me to his car,Taking my backpack and the McDonald box he opens the door,I reluctantly get in.

He gets in the front with his friend

Him: Drive.

15 minutes later of awkwardness,I was home

Parking the car two houses away I get off without saying a single word

Him: I'll see you soon princess.

I ignore him and start walking away when I was grabbed by my arm once again,turning me to look at him

His jaw twitching

His lips close to my ear,he whispers in his low, deep voice

"When I talk to you,I expect you to answer,the sooner you learn that the better.No one ignores me,you included. Is that clear ?"

Me: My middle finger salutes you

I mumbled

You brave Alona..Very brave if you ask me -My inner voice mocks me

Him: What was that ?

Me: I said it's crystal clear

He looks at me Amused,I had a feeling he heard



what I said the first time.

He lets go of me and goes back to his car.

I breath out

What have I got myself into ?

[11/08, 09:08] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 3

Rest of the week I went to school,I haven't met up with the guy who told me I owe him and I was glad for that.

It wasn't the best week but at least I wasn't depressed as I thought I'd be. I guess being around my friends helped take things off my mind.

It was Saturday morning and I was lazy to get up ,not like I had anything planned well at least not now maybe later on the day.

I finally dragged myself up.

Clean your room

Clean around the house

Wash the laundry

Take a bath

Prepare lunch

Then you done for the day

I was pretty much done with everything and I was in the middle of dressing to go meet up with Enzo when I heard a knock at the door

I just put on a robe and went to open to find a boy holding a piece of paper for me to take

I took it and the boy went out the gate before I could even ask who sent him.

Reading it out loud

-Meet me at the park,now -

Thinking it was enzo but I ask myself why didn't he just text me,oh he was playing one of his games .

Making my way to my room,I finish getting dressed then head out

10 minutes walk to the park,I look around for him.

He wasn't here yet so I sit on a bench watching the few kids playing on the swings

I suddenly feel two arms wrap around my waist

tightly from behind

Me: Enzo you almost scared me

I let out a sigh,pressing myself on his warm chest

He kept quiet

I felt him lean down to my neck,his lips kissing the spot

My eyes closed,enjoying the moment

Me: Enzo

Silent

I come back to my senses

Me: Enzo we in public

He stops and chuckles

I whip my head quickly,- wait! ..that deep throaty chuckle

Him: So glad I can make you moan ,but next time you moan you will be calling out Reece

not your so called boyfriend Enzo it is ?

He whispered in my ear.What the fuck ?

Me: Wena (You)

Him: Hey Princess, Miss me ?

Shocked

Me: W-what are you doing here,where's Enzo ?

I asked looking around

He sat next to me

Him: I don't know where that boy is but I'm here

Me: Y-You tricked me into coming here, Why ?

Him: I think you know why princess

Me:To pay you for saving me ? Look I told you I don't have anything,I don't have M..

Cutting me short

Him: I told you that's not what I want

Touching the side of my face

He looks down at my short summer dress, I quickly try to pull it down

Him: I wan-

Me: You want Me to have s-sex with you ?

I ask,suddenly scared.

Him:No,at least not yet.

Me: Then what do you want.

Him: You princess,all I want is you

Moment of silence

I stare at him in shock

He smirks at me.

Wipe that smirk of with a slap Alona,says my inner voice

What if he kills me me ?,he's scary as fuck and looks capable of doing it .

You'll cross that bridge when you get there

No!

My Jaw drops as I look at him in disbelief

Him: If you don't close your mouth,I might be tempted to put my dic-

I cut him short

Me: Eww..What ?

He chuckled

Him: I said if you don't close your mouth I might

be tempted to put my d-

I cut him short again

Me: Would you stop saying that to me.

I said almost raising my voice

Him: Why ? ,Chances of it happening are high now that you are going to be mine

He shrugged like it was a fact.

Me: I'm leaving.

I get up to leave and he also gets up

Him: I'm not done with you

With quick reflexes,he lifts me over his broad shoulders like a sack of potatoes

Me: What are you doing!,Put me down now!

I scream at him,beating his back with my fist

Him: I suggest you stop before you hurt yourself

He said,then he does the worst



He smacks my butt

Me: Did you just smacks my butt ?

I ask in disbelief

Him: I did

He smacks it again

Him: And I just did it again ,Gave me an excuse to tauch your ass

Me: Don't!, Put me down! Where are you taking me ?

I start to freak out

Him: Don't worry princess

He said and just continued walking.

After a few minutes of silence,he approach his car

Opening the door,he puts me in the back seat

He was kidnapping me ?

Me: You can't do this,It's against the law to take someone against their own will

Him: Don't give a fuck about the law,I haven't been caught yet and I have been breaking it for as long as I can remember.

Me:What do you mean ?

Him: Just shut up

He closed the door and went to the drivers seat.

I try opening the door handle but it wouldn't budge

Me: Open the door!

I scream yanking the handle

Him: If you break my door handle,you're going to have to pay me double what you owe me

I glare at him

Me: Are you serious?

Him: Dead serious

Me: Can you just please let me out, I'm meeting up with my boyfriend, I've never stood him up before ..he'll be worried if I don't show up.

Him: He won't

Then turned around and started driving

Me: What do you mean he won't ? What did you do to him?

I began to panic as he stares ahead ignoring me

Him: What did you do to him you assh-

Him: I suggest you stop insulting me, I may have to punish that fine ass of yours and If you think smacking it hurts.. Imagine what I can do

Me: I'm not insulting you I'm just describing you a-

I shut my mouth before I piss him off and decide not to ever take me home, trying to stay

calm

Me: Please let me go, I promise I won't call the police and I won't tell anyone.

I was scared for my life, what if he hurts me

Me: What are you going to do to me ?

Him: Don't worry your pretty head, you'll know soon

Later on he pulls up at this huge house

The House I have been into before, I'm guessing it's his

Me: Why are we here, what are you going to do to me ?

My heart beat increases.

He takes me by my wrist out of the car, I tug my

self back

Me: Let go of me!

I try kicking him as I continue to scream at him

he picks me up by my waist and carries me inside the house.

He heads towards The stairs

I plead at him to let go of me.

Now in front of double doors,he opens them getting in he locks the door behind him.

It's the bedroom I woke up in,Saturday morning

Walking towards the bed,he throws me on it.

Flashbacks from a few nights ago ran through my mind

Me: W-what are you doing ?

Getting on top of me,grabbing my hands pulling them above my head

Me: P-please d-don't hurt me.

He stares at me

Him: Do you think I would hurt what's mine, That I could hurt this beautiful face ? That I could hurt this body, that will belong to me soon ?

His free hand touched the side of my waist , His touch was gentle

I held in back tears

Me: Stop P-please

I stuttered

Me: I'll do what ever you want me to , but please don't touch me

Him: Break up with that thing you call your boyfriend .

[11/08, 09:11] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 4

I don't know who he was and I didn't want to know, All I knew was that he was bad news and I wanted to stay away from him and now he

wants me to break up with the guy I have been in love with for almost a year so that I can be with him.

Hell.No.

Reece: Break up with that thing you call your boyfriend.

Me: Break up w-,N-no I won't do that I love him and I'm not breaking up with him for you.I don't want an assh-

Him: Don't say something you might regret princess

He says as he places a kiss on the tip of my nose .

He continues to place kisses and my body reacted in a way it shouldn't

Snap out of it Alona !

Me: Stop, I want you to get off me.

I breathe out shutting my eyes tightly

Him: I don't think you want me to, I think I'm enjoying myself where I am and so are you

Lifting his head up, he looks me straight in the eyes

Mastering a serious face, his eyes void of emotion

Him: I want you to break up with him and become mine.

Me: And if I don't ?

I challenge .

He kisses my cheek

Him: Something bad will happen to him

Me: What do you mean ?

Him: I'll kill him.



\*\*\*\*\*

It was 7pm.

I just got off the pots

I would have dished up for myself but I didn't have any appetite for food

I was laying down on my bed, crying my heart out

It all started with a jog, I thought to myself

If I didn't go out that night, I wouldn't be in this mess I'm in.

10 pm and I couldn't sleep, How could I after the day I had ?

Being Literally kidnapped, then forced to break

up with my boyfriend.

How can I break up with Someone I love ?

How can I break up with someone I've loved for almost a year

How can I break up with someone who loves me

how can I break his heart ?

I just let the tears fall down my cheek.

My cellphone buzz with a incoming text

Grabbing my phone I see a text from Enzo

-Hey babe,Wanted to make sure you are feeling better.I missed you the rest of the day,can't wait to see you .Goodnight xx -

When he called me to meet up with him at the park,I had lied to him saying I couldn't come out because I was coming with fever.

He bought it.

-Feeling better thanks for checking up on me í  
½í,💎 Missed you too babe.

Goodnight â💎¥ -

I replied

Putting my phone under my pillow,getting ready to fall asleep.

Before my head hits the pillow My phone buzzes again

Smiling thinking it was Enzo

-hey princess miss me?,hope you are thinking of a way to dump your little boyfriend,I'm giving you 2 days to get it done,if you fail then your so called boyfriend suffers the consequences

Reece x -

That Asshole , I mutter to myself.

Pushing my phone away from me

I HATE HIM

I HATE HIM

I HATE HIM

I H-

Ok you probably tired of reading those I hate him.

I got up and went to the bathroom, opening the cabinet I took out two sleeping pills.

Popping them in my mouth downing them with water, I go to bed and wait for the pills to kick in.

\*\*\*\*\*

Woke up Sunday morning and Got ready to go to church with my mom

I wasn't the type of girl to go to church every Sunday

I went sometimes -don't you dare look at me like that -

But today I just had to go

I need to pray

ask God to protect me from that Asswipe

Oops í ½í¹ ❖

35+ and I was done

My mom was waiting for me In her car

Mom: Hurry up Alona or we gonna be late  
,Uyathanda ube uhleli espilini uzilungisa.We  
going to church for god sake not e Mall, You  
can go with your pyjamas on no one will care.

Me: Yeah..Right..Pyjamas to church..very smart  
mom..very smart ..pretty cool if you ask me.

I say to her chuckling

Her: Uhh.. Lets just go

I got in the car,laughing my ass off at her slip up

I remember her going to work one day with pyjamas, she was in a hurry

And they called her in the middle of the night to go help out because they were in a shortage of staff

I remember every day of the week I teased her with it until she got irritated and threatened to take my phone away from me for a month if I didn't stop

I never brought it up again, until now

Well she brought it up .

\*\*\*\*\*

After 2 hours of church service.

I had to walk back home because mom stayed behind for ..well I think it was one of those church meetings .

It wasn't a long walk,I needed to clear my mind anyway so I didn't mind walking back.

On my way home,I meet up with Enzo who was with his friends.

He decides to walk me back telling his friends that he'll catch up with them later .

Now walking hand in hand after he took my bag from my hand, he was sweet

One of the reasons I love him,now how was I expected to break up with him when he treated me like this ?

Him: So,how are you feeling ?

I snap out of my thoughts

Me: Better than the other day

Him: Good,I hate it when you sick

Me: Because that means you won't be seeing



me

He chuckles

Him: Yeah and that I won't be able to do this

He leans in to Kiss me,deepening the kiss befor

[11/08, 09:13] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 5

Previous

On my way home,I meet up with Enzo who was with his friends.

He decides to walk me back telling his friends that he'll catch up with them later .

Now walking hand in hand after he took my bag from my hand, he was sweet

One of the reasons I love him,now how was I expected to break up with him when he treated me like this ?

Him: So,how are you feeling ?

I snap out of my thoughts

Me: Better than the other day

Him: Good,I hate it when you sick

Me: Because that means you won't be seeing me

He chuckles

Him: Yeah and that I won't be able to do this

He leans in to Kiss me,deepening the kiss before I pull away and look up at him

Me: We in public

I giggle

Him: So ?,I wanna let them know you my girl

Me: I know I am and you don't have to worry about that .

Only if you knew that I was forced to br-..

don't start,just enjoy the moment while it lasts.  
My inner voice scolds me .

He walks me the rest of the way home

\*\*\*\*\*

Got home a few minutes later and I started  
cooking

Monday

I was on my 4th period in class when the  
intercom beeped

Asking for everyone's attention

Moment of silence before the the Clarks' voice

was heard

" Alona"

-What ?

"Alona Ngema"

-The

"Alona Ngema please Come to the office"

-Fuck ?

everyone's eyes were on me as If I just blurted out that I killed someone

Their eyes secretly asking what have I done

had no idea

I quietly got up,excused from class.

I made my way out and off I went to the principals office with trembling feet and my pumping heart ready to jump out of my chest.

I knocked

"come in" said the voice on the other side.

Made my way inside,my eyes meeting the principal's gaze before it falls to the person seated on the desk

To say I was shocked was just an understatement

I took a deep breath trying to calm myself.

It was Him, Reece

What was he doing here ?

Headmaster: Your brother is here to take you home, he says it's a family related matter so I didn't bother to ask any further. You are allowed to go home Ms Ngema

Me: Sir I th-

I began to say but I was quickly Cut short

Reece: Get your bag I'll be waiting for you in the parking lot.

He said staring at me, daring me to refuse

I just cower away and quickly got out of the office to go take my things from in my class .

Meeting Romeo's curious gaze in ,I quietly tell him I'll call later and tell him whatever he wants to know.

15 minutes later

I was sitting in front of Reece at McDonald's

Having a staring contest

I couldn't take his hard gaze any longer so I looked away,once again cowering

I looked at him again to find him smirking,satisfied with his power over me

"Wipe that smirk off that asswipe's face with a slap" Inner voice said

No!

He chuckles in amusement.

Me: What do you want this time

I asked through gritted teeth

Him: Watch your tone Princess

Calm down Alona, Calm down

Me: What do you want Reece?

I try asking politely.

Him: Aww you see

He coos at me pinching at my cheeks

Him: That wasn't so hard now was it ?

I slap his hand away and glare at him

Me: Get your filthy hands off me !

I say aloud, getting nearby tables attention

Him: I've already asked you to watch your tone of voice when talking to me ,my patience is running out.



"Take a deep breath, Alona"

Now let it out,it'll help you from strangling this asshole " My inner voice try's to help me

Him: Now enjoy your lunch and I will talk to you later,when you've cooled your tits.

I stare at him with wide eyes,he smirks at me.

Pervert!

\*\*\*\*\*

8 pm

I have just gotten off the phone with Romeo and now I was putting my books in my school bag as I was done doing my school work

I was heading to the kitchen to dish for myself.

Mom wasn't home yet and she wasn't coming back any minute or hour so I was home alone, nothing new

I was pretty used to being alone as my mom was a workaholic and she mostly worked night shifts coming early in the mornings

Oh I've already told you that

-Sighs dramatically -

I was watching some movie while I was eating when my phones' ringtone disturbed me.

Picking up without checking the caller

Me: Hello

Caller: Hey princess

Oh God

Me: Do you annoy people as a hobby or is it just your personality ?

He chuckles

I don't wait for him to reply

Me: Oh It's Alona

Him: I know but I prefer calling you princess

Asshole, I mumble

Him: What was that

I had a feeling he heard me, he wanted me repeat it knowing damn well I wouldn't

Me: Nothing

Him: Thought so

I sigh

Him:Come out

Me: What ?

Him: Come.Out

He said in his low deep voice that could scare

the shit out of someone's Assho-

Stop swearing Alona!

Me: I'm not slow,I got what you said I just want to know why

Him: I want to see you.

Me: No

I said without stuttering,standing my ground .

Him: No ?

Me: No

Him: Ok then I'm coming ther-

And risk being strangled to death by you in my home .

Me: Ok I'm coming

He hangs up

I got up and went to put my now empty plate in the sink

I made my way out,locking the door behind.

His car was parked a couple of houses away from mine, atleast he had some type of respect

I noticed that he wasn't in the same car I have seen him driving these past few days.

He's leaning on it smoking a cigarette, throws away the half smoked cigarette away before turning to look at me

I stop,standing few feet away from him

Him: Ucimba uzothetha nabani ume apho ?  
(Who do you think you going to talk to standing there?)

He takes a few steps towards me before he grabs me by arm and brings me to stand in-

between his legs while he's leaning on the car

If only Enzo would see me now

Him: Have you decided on what its gon' be ? If  
He dies or lives,I'm sure you don't want his  
blood on your hands though s-

Deciding I don't wanna hear more

Me: No I haven't

Don't push his buttons Alona

Him: Testing my patience I see

He chuckles slowly shaking his head.

He turns around opening the door

Him: Get in

Me: Where are you t-

Him: I said get the fuck in

He almost shout at me.

Just imagine that deep voice,scary I tell you

I get in the passenger side ,he closes the door before making his way to the drivers seat.

35 minutes later,he stopped the car and told me to get out.

Not wanting to push his buttons any further ,I obeyed

I follow him in some dodgy looking like house.

Opening the door,we find some guys sitting at a table

Playing cards and drinking what looked like alcohol,beers to be specific.

I followed through a long corridor where we stopped at a door.

Opening it,he pushes me in

Me: W-what am I doing here ?,what are you going to d-

I was blinded by the light that was switched on in the once dark room.

Taking in my surroundings.

I looked around nervous , wondering why he brought me here.

My question was answered when my eyes landed on two guys chained to the chairs they were sitting in,their faces almost unrecognisable

Swollen,Bruises and Blood

They were the ones who almost raped me that Friday

Reece: See you have roughed them up,Good job .. you'd make a good makeup artist

He turns to look at the guy who was standing in



front of the two guys, shirt rolled, Fists with traces of blood

They chuckle

Him: I'll finish them ,bring me my gun first drawer in my office

The guy goes out

Me: What are you g-going to d-do ?

I ask in a Trembling voice

Him: What I should have done Friday night, I'm making them pay for what they did to you. They are going to regret trying to mess with you that night

Me: What ? No please..don't do this, just take them to the police I-I'll press charges but please don't kill them.

I tried to beg.

The door opened, The guy got in

Reece didn't say anything as he took the gun

from the guy

Him: Take her out of here, don't manhandle her

He says with a stern voice.

The guy nods as he shows me out of the room, closing the door behind

I heard two loud gunshots

Screaming and covering my ears

It was silent

Scared out of my skin

Me: What just happened ?

Him: Your man happened .

I was standing outside sobbing quietly when I suddenly felt two strong arms wrap around my body..Reece

Him: Shh princess you going to be alright.

He said in my ear

Him: Now you know I don't bluff, this is to show you that if you don't break up with lover boy, he will get a bullet in his forehead just like those two fuckers.

Me: H-how do you S-sleep at night. ?

He shrugged

Him: Just like everyone, I put my head on a pillow and close my eyes and wait for sleep to overtake me.

He smirks

Suddenly I felt dizzy, balancing with the wall and closing my eyes, now struggling to breath..

Him: I don't like seeing you like this princess but I just had to make my point.

He picks me up bridal style, not having any

strength to fight him I let him

He gently puts me in the backseat, putting a seatbelt on and kissing my forehead

Before making his way to the drivers seat..

[11/08, 09:15] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 6

Previous

35 minutes later, he stopped the car and told me to get out.

Not wanting to push his buttons any further, I obeyed

I follow him in some dodgy looking like house.

Opening the door, we find some guys sitting at a table

Playing cards and drinking what looked like alcohol, beers to be specific.

I followed through a long corridor where we stopped at a door.

Opening it,he pushes me in

Me: W-what am I doing here ?,what are you going to d-

I was blinded by the light that was switched on in the once dark room.

Taking in my surroundings.

I looked around nervous , wondering why he brought me here.

My question was answered when my eyes landed on two guys chained to the chairs they were sitting in,their faces almost unrecognisable

Swollen,Bruises and Blood

They were the ones who almost raped me that Friday

Reece: See you have roughed them up,Good job

.. you'd make a good makeup artist

He turns to look at the guy who was standing in front of the two guys, shirt rolled, Fists with traces of blood

They chuckle

Him: I'll finish them ,bring me my gun first drawer in my office

The guy goes out

Me: What are you g-going to d-do ?

I ask in a Trembling voice

Him: What I should have done Friday night, I'm making them pay for what they did to you. They are going to regret trying to mess with you that night

Me: What ? No please..don't do this, just take them to the police I-I'll press charges but please don't kill them.

I tried to beg.

The door opened,The guy got in

Reece didn't say anything as he took the gun  
from the guy

Him: Take her out of here,don't manhandled  
her

He says with a stern voice.

The guy nods as he shows me out of the  
room,closing the door behind

I heard two loud gunshots

Screaming and covering my ears

It was silent

Scared out of my skin

Me: What just happened ?

Him: Your man happened .

I was standing outside sobbing quietly when I

suddenly felt two strong arms wrap around my body..Reece

Him: Shh princess you going to be alright.

He said in my ear

Him: Now you know I don't bluff,this is to show you that if you don't break up with lover boy,he will get a bullet in his forehead just like those two fuckers.

Me: H-how do you S-sleep at night. ?

He shrugged

Him: Just like everyone,I put my head on a pillow and close my eyes and wait for sleep to overtake me.

He smirks

Suddenly I felt dizzy,balancing with the wall and closing my eyes, now struggling to breath..

Him: I don't like seeing you like this princess but



I just had to make my point.

He picks me up bridal style,not having any strength to fight him I let him

He gently puts me in the backseat,putting a seatbelt on and kissing my forehead

Before making his way to the drivers seat..

He drove me home

And I was now in my bed shaking and still in shock from what happened a few hours ago

I couldn't sleep because everytime I closed my eyes I could see their battered and bruised face

I could still hear the gunshots

I could still see his devilish smirk mocking me

Now I was having nightmares

\*\*\*\*\*

In the morning

Waking up in a pool of my own sweat,I lay on  
my bed still,Afraid of moving and having to  
wake up to what will be my reality

I finally decide to get up and make my way to  
my bathroom to take a bath,After I get out I look  
myself in the mirror

Red puffy eyes

Bags under them reminding me I didn't sleep a  
blink last night

I looked bad and I felt bad

Knowing I had to break up with Enzo before  
Reece took him away from me for good.

I wore a gown,deciding that I wasn't going to  
school today I made my way to the kitchen to  
make cereal for myself taking it to the sitting  
room

Making my self comfortable,watching some  
cartoons I begin to dug in

Minutes later my mom appears wearing her  
work uniform

Her: Good morning my baby girl

She kisses my cheek,engulfing me in her warm  
arms making me feel better

Me: Morning Mom

I say forcing a smile

Her: You are not going to school today,why ?

Me: Not feeling well

She immediately sits next to me, putting a hand to my forehead

A worried look on her face

You could tell her everything - my inner voice suggests

No, I can't risk her getting involved in this mess  
?Who knows what Reece could do to her now that he's shown me he could hurt anyone who stands in his way to get me ?

I sigh

Me: Don't worry yourself mom Its just a fever

I lie, forcing a smile again trying to reassure her that I'll be okay

Her: I could also call in sick and we can stay

together,we'll watch a movie and warm you up  
abit,I'll make you chicken soup and m-

Me: Mom ,you can't keep on babying me

Her: Well you are still my little baby girl

Me: Mom -I sigh- go to work,I'll be okay.

She keeps quite for a moment

Her: Okay I'll call in late then just to make you  
the soup and give you pills to make you feel  
better

Before I could protest,she was already in the  
kitchen.

Later on

I was done eating the bowl of hot soup and  
downing a couple of pills that were put on the  
table with a glass of water for me to take before  
she went for work.

\*\*\*\*\*

I fell asleep on the couch and I was woken up  
by a knock on the door

Grumbling and getting up to open

I was met by Romeo, handing me some Donuts  
in a paper bag.

He had texted me earlier asking why I was  
absent from school, I told him I wasn't feeling  
well and here he was.

Awesome friend I have

Me: You bunked school

I stated matter of factly

Him: I had to make sure you were okay, beside  
being pressurized by Enzo to come check up on  
you because he couldn't, going for soccer  
practice at second break he couldn't miss it  
because his couch would be on his throat later  
on

Me: Yeah he texted me saying he'll see me later

I move out of the way for him to get in

Him: Oh,you look like shit

Me: Thanks

Him: It wasn't a compliment

Me: Just leave me alone

He chuckles

Him: Seriously though,what's going on

Me: Fever

Him: I mean what's going on with you lately  
?,don't think about lying to me I've had enough  
of that from you these past few days

You can get it off your chest Alona or you could  
let it eat you alive till you become a skeleton -

Not appealing.

I start telling Romeo half of the story leaving

some things behind, Like the part where I  
literally witnessed a murder and Reece's threats  
I watch him as he connects the dots

Him: He's hot though,he can qualify on being  
Calvin Klein model

I look at him with my jaw hanging.

Trust him going offside

Me: I just told you that I'm forced into breaking  
up with my 9+ month boyfriend whom you know  
I'm madly in love with and all you think about is  
how hot and handsome that Asshole is ?

He smirks and looks at me with a grin

Him: I didn't say he was handsome though,not  
that ndiya'phikisa but it just came out of your  
mouth

Oh my god

Did I say he was handsome ?



Blushing and furious at my slip up,I try  
mastering a serious face

Me: Get out

I'm sure my face was red as a tomato right now.

He burst out laughing till he had tears coming  
from his eyes

I wait for him to finish,looking at me with a grin  
he takes a deep breath

Him: On a serious note though my friend,what  
are you going to do ?

I sigh,only thing I've been doing lately.

I shrug

Me: I'll break up with him,It's for his safety after  
all.It'll hurt him as much as it'll hurt me but..I  
don't have a choice

Him: You going to tell him the real reason  
behind the break up ?

I shook my head no

Me: I can't,I'll let him have his way I know he is going to think I'm breaking up with him for another guy who I apparently find better than him and so on but it's better than w

We continue to talk until it got late and I had to walk him out

\*\*\*\*\*

6 pm

I was sitting at the park alone on a bench waiting for Enzo after i texted him to meet up with me .

I was thinking of a way to approach the situation.

Hugged from behind,smelling the familiar cologne that I grew to like

He was here

Placing a kiss on my cheek,he sits down his arm not leaving my waist

Him: Hey

I turn to look at his ever smiling face.

I don't think I could do this

Him: What's the matter babe?,are you okay ?

Masking my worried face with a smile,I quickly nod

Me: I'm alright,I just wanted to see you because I m-missed you

I said,more of a question than a statement

Him: You would tell me if something was bothering you right ?

This is your chance Alona

No!

How can I tell him ?

Me: I'll tell you some other t-time, I just want to be with you now

He nods and holds me to his chest

We sit in a comfortable silence till I ask him to walk me home.

You such a coward - says my inner voice.

[11/08, 09:16] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 7

Following day.

I stretch out my arm's and let out a groan of

sorts

My eyes trail to my phone that's blaring out it's usual alarm and I quickly silence it.

Making my way into the bathroom,I first look at my reflection on the mirror

My hair all over my face

No bags under my eyes

Because I actually fell asleep last night after I took sleeping pills,so no nightmares haunted my dreams last night and I was grateful.

But sooner or later I had to find a way to deal with them I can't actually be dependant on sleeping pills,I heard they can be pretty addictive

I sigh.

Continuing to stare at my reflection

Yo look like death -my inner voice once again  
mocks me

Actually you look like -

Stop!

I open the tap and wait for it to fill in before  
stripping out of my clothes and start to bath.

\*\*\*\*\*

I was sitting with Romeo at second break  
before my 5 th period,munching on some  
biscuits his mom baked.

Everything was good so far

I avoided Enzo the whole day and it was easy

because we had no classes together

I felt bad though but I didn't think I could face him again without breaking down.

I heard my cell phone vibrate in my pocket. I take it out and notice I had a few text messages

Babe where are you ?

-Enzo

You better had broken up with fuckboy!

-Reece

I scroll down

I'm picking you up after school and you better be there

- Reece

Asshole

Princess ?

-Reece

fucking return my texts before I lose it

-Reece

Where the fuck are you ?

- Reece

I delete all his Messages and reply to Enzo's, putting my phone back in my pocket I get up and walk to class as the bell for 5th period rang 5 minutes ago but I was busy with my phone so I didn't hear it



Romeo has already left,so much for being a best friend

5 minutes before the bell rings signaling end of school but I was already out of the school gates,not wanting to find Reece waiting for me outside school premises or Enzo waiting outside my class

I made my way out the gate,with no in sight

I was walking alone to the taxi rank when a car suddenly pulls up right next to me..oh Shit

The passenger door opens and Reece comes out looking pissed

I tried to run but he was too quick as grabbed my arm with a death grip

Me: You hurting me let go!

I scream at him but he just throws me in the

backseat and also gets in

Him: Drive

He commands, I follow his gaze and see some guy in the drivers seat

He does what he's told

I turn to look at Reece

Me: What the hell is wrong with you ?..Let me out!

I continue to scream,he catches me off guard when his hand goes around my neck and slams me back on the seat hard Making my head hurt

I tried getting his hand off me but it was no use,he was strong

Tears start to fall down my cheek, I look at him pleading silently for him to let go of me

Loosening his grip a bit ,he looks at me

In his low deep voice he asks " Did I or did I not, say I was picking you up"

I keep quiet

"Answer me!" He yells at me

Nodding my head a quick yes

Him: Do you like pissing me off ?

I shook my head no, praying he won't hurt me any further.

His grip tighten again on my neck

Me: Reece..p-please, let go I didn't mean to I-I w..

Him: Yes you did!, Uyenze ngamabomu Alona  
!(You did it on purpose Alona)

Me: I-I'm sorry Reece, please I-

Him: Did you break up with him ?

Shit!

Him: Did you fuckin' break up with him !?

He continues to yell and I flinch on my seat..

Damn his deep voice

Me: I-

Him: Did you?,Yes or no

Me: N-no ..b-but I w

Him: Turn the car around

Me: Reece,p-please no I'll do it just please don't hurt him

I begged

He looks at the driver and barks at him to stop the car and leave us for a moment

The was silence,but his glare which was directed at me put me on the edge

Him: Did I not prove to you that andixhomi,that I don't give second chances ?

I couldn't help but sob,I was so scared

Quickly nodding ..

Me: You d-did b-but I -I didn't get the ch-, I'll do it but p-please don't hurt him. I'll do anything you want me t-to do

I said not even understanding what I said, I was stuttering alot

Him: Anything ?

I just nod

He smirked as he looked at me

Him: Kiss me

I gulped

His lips brushed on mine, I tried to move my face but he held my neck in place

Him: Do not move

With a quick nod

He forces his lips on mine, kissing him back with trembling lips

He pulls back and glares at me warningly, He kisses me again and I try so hard to stop myself

from trembling.

with one hand still on my neck,his other hand went down my side going under my skirt brushing my thigh

Me: Reece please d-

Him: Shh princess,I'm not going to hurt you

He said removing his lips from mine and kissing my neck

Me: Stop,p-pl

Him: Don't Fuckin' tell me to stop ,understood ?

I quickly nod

Him: Answer me!

Me: Y-yes I understand

I say as more tears come out

Him: I want you but if you continue to piss me off,I'm not going to tolerate it b-

He was disturbed by his ringing phone

He takes it,with a few Mmm's and nods

He says he's coming to the person on the phone then he hangs up and turns to look at me

Him: We are not done Princess

With that he calls the guy who was driving us to come back,He gives him directions to my house.

\*\*\*\*\*

8pm and I was standing outside the night air,few houses away from mine and few feet away from Reece who was in his car waiting for me to run into his arms when I'm done with what he wanted me to do.

I was waiting for Enzo

In deep thoughts of what I was going to do.

I got frightened just by the person who hugged me from behind Turning to look,I find Enzo.

Leaning down he tries to kiss me but I back

away,he looks at me with hurt written all over his face before it was masked with a face of confusion

Him: Yintoni ingxaki Alona ? (what's the problem Alona)

Me: I'm sorry

Starting to cry once again

Him: Sorry for what?, whatever it is that is bothering you you can tell me,we'll get through it together ..let me help you

I shake my head

Me: You can't

Him:what do you mean I can't ?,as I-

Me: I can't be with you anymore

I blurt out

Moment of silence as I watch him process what I just said

Him: What ?



Me: I-I'm breaking up with you,it's over between us Enzo

More tears come out,As much as I was hurting him I was also hurting

Not waiting for him to say anything,I turned away from him and ran back home

I was full on crying when I got home,Ignoring my Supper in the oven I just went to lock my self in my room and got under the blankets when my phone started ringing

The name Reece appears on the screen,I pick up not waiting for him to say anything

Me: Are you happy now you selfish bastard !?

I scream at him

Him: Very happy,thanks for asking .

I bet he was smirking

Throwing the phone on the other side of my bed making it fall over but i don't pick it up anyway.

I bury my head under my pillow and pray for sleep to overtake me

[11/08, 09:17] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 8

A Month passed since I have talked to Enzo.

I remember the last time I talked to him,I was Coming back from school alone when he decided to accompany me because he wanted to talk

He wanted answers on way I suddenly broke up with him,I couldn't answer him

He was determined to get them until a car pulled up next to us

Watching Reece get out already glaring at Enzo

Reece: Alona Masambe.

He said in his low deep voice,trying to maintain

his anger.

Looking at Enzo with watery eyes, I open the passenger seat and get in and Reece close the door behind me

I watch him lean in to whisper in Enzo's ear " If you ever see you next to her again,i'll make sure you never kick another football in you life "

then he makes his way in the car

driving in full speed leaving Enzo behind

I watch his face written hurt,betrayal and my heart shatters.

This was goodbye and he will never know the real reason for leaving him,All he was going to know was that I broke his heart to be with another guy .

A month without reece though definitely what I needed,In that month i managed to attend a few therapy sessions and they really helped with all

I've been going through ever since 'he' (Reece) came into my life

In all that,Romeo was always by my side supporting me in whatever I was doing .

I was getting my life back

.....

Friday night

I was awaiting the arrival of my one and only brother,Oz short for ( Ozamokuhle)

He was coming back to live with us because he supposedly missed us

Hard to believe because at the age of 18 he decided to move out because mom was driving him crazy about getting a job,he was tired of the constant nagging so as soon as he reached his legal age he moved out

He apparently found a job,which he doesn't talk about often..Either way he makes alot of money and he already has his own house and he isn't in jail or dead so I guess its a reasonable job.

But now he was coming back

I know I don't sound happy right now,you know why ?

It's because he is a Pain in the ass. Don't tell him that though he'll kill me

He was over-protective of me,Any time any guy tried to talk to me he usually scared them away and they never stood up to him because they were supposedly 'Scared ' proving to me they were not worth it

I never minded though when he was like that,It helped with the never ending fear of being taken advantage of.

It was until he left that I was able to meet up with a couple of guys in my school but none of them I took serious

Until I met Enzo I f- don't go there,my inner voice stops me

I sigh

Nevertheless,I loved my brother though.

As if on Cue,there was a knock at the door

A big smile graces my lips when I know who it is,rushing to open the door

He literally kicked it open

I glare at him

Him: Yinto ?(what), I've got these ( showing me a sports bag and a duffle bag on his shoulder ) and they heavy.

Shaking my head in disapproval but couldn't help the smile that threatened to show

I took in his appearance,he was almost unrecognizable with his new look

His arms covered in tattoos,reminding me of R-

Don't!

They suited him though,I noticed another tattoo on the back of his ear..Nice .

Me: What's with the whole cool bad boy look ?,I know you've always been bad but I think now you worse

Him: Is that a compliment ?

Me: Not really

Him: Thanks anyway ,now you gonna help me or what ?

I took a look at him again,he's changed that I could tell but I didn't know whether it was a good or a bad change,for better or worse

Something was definitely up with him.

I hug him before he tells me to back off,he was always like that though but I knew he secretly loved my hugs.

He goes up to his room that I cleaned earlier on,he told us on last minutes that he was coming here after all so he can't blame me if it's not 100%

Not that it ever was,even when he was living here

Me: Dinner is ready

I yell for him to hear

Him: Coming

He replies

I take out plates and start dishing for the three of us and then putting mom's food in the oven

Oz comes in a moment later smelling the air

Him: I missed home



Me: You can wash the dishes when we done

Him: I take that back

I lough at him while he pouts

We dug in catching up.

He decides to leave later on saying 'Shay' I  
round to amajita '

Locking the door behind him,I go to bed early.

\*\*\*\*\*

Waking up in the morning to go to school..

My legs swing over the side of my bed and I get  
up with a deep yawn.

Making my way to the bathroom lazily

I turn on the water,waiting for it to be warm  
before stripping out of my pyjamas and getting  
in to bath.

I look my self in the mirror,A smile takes my lips  
as i look at myself .

I leave my room to check if Oz came back  
yesterday night or not

Pushing the door open to his room and Rolling  
my eyes at the two naked bodies I see in his  
bed, he was in the middle of the two wearing  
nothing but his boxers

My eyes trailed to the two girls that found  
themselves in his bed last night.

I close the door making my way to the  
kitchen,Deciding to go make myself something  
to eat to pass time,since I woke up early

Fixing myself a cereal

I sit down and wait for it

Three

Two

On-

Angered footsteps before

equally angered voices are heard

Girl 1:I hate you

Girl 2: Delete my number you Asshole!

Then the front door slams shut.

I laugh my ass off till I almost choked to death

Quickly getting up and running for a glass of  
water,downing it ..feeling better

I wipe traces of tears from my face

Putting my bowl in the sink and taking my  
school bag

I make my way out satisfied at watching my morning show that I was used to over the past few years

You gotta love my brother though

"I'm absolutely screwed for this Maths test !,I didn't get a chance to practice "

Romeo whines as we walk to our 3rd period  
Maths

Me: You were busy getting drunk,serves you right

I smirk

Him: So much for being my best friend.

I chuckle while he shoves me away from him,bumping into someone

Quickly turning to apologise ,but the words were caught in my throat as I see who I bumped into..Enzo,he was in the middle of a make out session with one of my classmates and I just disturbed him

My heart was in p- don't start

I stop myself from falling into depression

Girl: What are you looking at ?

She says glaring at me

I was going to apologise but you know what ..

Me: I don't know,something ugly ?

Girl: Oh,I'm shame was I meant to be offended ?,the only thing Offended me is your Ugly facial

Me: You're literally to stupid to insult.

Enzo was about to laugh when his girl glares at him,he covers it with a cough beating his chest

in the process

Romeo doesn't hide it though, he laughs with the rest of the crowd

Head master: All off you in class, now!

His booming voice makes us run to class before he even finish his sentence

He was scary like that.

15 minutes in the class

Writing the test in ease while I watched Romeo glaring at the ceiling as if it was going to give him answers

Suddenly he abruptly gets up, getting everyone's attention

He goes to our Math's teacher, Mrs. Pillay.

Him: Can I go to the bathroom ?

Her: To do what ?

Him: To look for dragons,What else ?

He asks in a duh tone,Making everyone laugh

Her: I'm giving you 5 minutes

Such a polite teacher we've never really seen  
her pissed

Him: What if I want to take a dump ,I can't  
possibly do that in 5 minutes

He continues to push her buttons

Her: Romeo!

She says in a warningly voice

Him: Juliet

Making us Laugh again

Her: If you don't really want to go the toilet,sit  
down .

Deciding to go out ,Opening the door and not  
closing it

Her: Do you have a back tail that's going to

magically close the door for you ?

Him: Unfortunately or fortunately it's in the front  
Mam and I don't think it can

\*\*\*\*\*

After school

Passing time at the Mall,window shopping  
When a dress catches my eyes

I go inside and check it out,deciding I like it I'll  
come back to Lay bye it on Saturday morning if  
it's still going to be here

Getting some pies at checkers before we leave  
for the taxis,I say my byes to Romeo and we  
part ways.

Getting home ,I open with my key and get in  
Oz was out with his friends I guess,at least he



made me something to eat

Going up to my room to take off my school uniform,I change into some denim bum shots and a white baggy vest

I make my way into the kitchen and take my food and go eat in the sitting room.

I had nothing planned and I had no school work that needed to be done so I decided to take a nap.

\*\*\*\*\*

Woken up by my phones ringtone

I lazily pick it up

Me: Hello

Caller: So is this how your sleepy voice sounds,princess ? Cute.

Fuck!

[11/08, 09:17] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 9

It's Reece

Him: I'm outside

Then he hangs up

I close my eyes for a moment, before I get up to switch on the lights

Checking the time

6:43 pm

I make my way to my room to freshen up, making sure to take my time just to piss him off cause I felt like he was in a good mood, why not ruin it when he was about to ruin mine ?

I make my way outside, seeing him in a different car once again

Leaning on it he was scrolling through his phone

I take baby steps, finally standing a couple of feet away ..I look up to him

Me:What do you want ?

Him: Tsk Tsk Princess,that's no way to greet your Manfriend (Boyfriend)

Me: My Manfriend ?I'm trying so hard right now not to roll my eyes,like really hard.

I mock laugh

Him: You done ?

I nod

Him: You got drool on the side of your lips

He smirks at me

Quickly looking at the car mirror,almost terrified of what I'm about to see

Nothing

Asshole

"So wish these past three weeks you went MIA

you we rotting in hell."

He looks at me Amused

Oops,did I say that out loud? guess I did

Him: I missed you

Me: Wish I could say the same.

Him: You wound my heart sometimes,Princess

Me: You have one ?

Him: Y-

Me: Look I need to get back home It's already late and I have to cook for my family

Him: You mean your mother,who is still at work and only comes back earlier in the morning ?

He says smugly

Me: I don't really remember telling you all that

information ?

Him: What can I say,I've got eyes and ears everywhere

Me: Those eyes and ears of yours forgot to mention that now I also have a brother whose going to be around for a while

I smirk

Him: You didn't tell me

Me: Oh I didn't tell you ?,Well it must've been none of your business then

Him: I could actually put that smart mouth of yours into use,either than you using it for snide remarks directed at me

He winks

Catching on

Me: Pervert

Me: Your dick is the size of a tic-tac.

I challenge

Him: That's why your moms mouth is so fresh.

My jaw almost drops to the ground

Me: I'm leaving

I stomp off and make my way to my house  
leaving him laughing his ass off.

\*\*\*\*\*

Following day

Getting out of my room,I took my school bag  
and made my way to the kitchen where I found  
mom and Oz eating pancakes for breakfast

Me: Morning mom

I say kissing her cheek

Mom: Morning baby

Oz: I'm also here you know

Me: Morning Oz

I say kissing his cheek also

Me: Happy ?

Him: Very

He says messing my hair

I slap his hand away and he smirks at me

I sit down and take my plate and start digging in before I quickly rush out realizing I was running late.

I walk to my first class ,ready to start the day

In the middle of the day,I got a text from Reece saying he was picking me up after school.

He just ruined my mood

Focusing on my school work for the day,I didn't

want to think about about him

Walking out the gate Reece was leaning on his car,surrounded by a couple of girls he was trying so hard to get to back off,he was irritated

I watched with a satisfied grin before he sent a hard glare my way

I make my way to him with a slow pace,just killing time

I approach him..

Girl: Can we atleast get your number ?

Him: I don't think my girlfriend over here would appreciate it

He says making them all turn around to glare at me..

Woah shem ..

Me: Actually I don't mind

Girl 2: Really ?



Me: Yeah sure,I mean why not

I say taking out my phone and checking Reece's number which was saved as Asshole,Calling out the number to the girls

They thank me and sway their hips going their way squealing .

I look at Reece and meet his bored expression

Him: You never fail to amuse.

Me: Glad

I get in the car and slam the door shut with force

In my peripheral vision,I see him staring at me

He starts the car and drive's off

Him: You want me to get you something to eat ?

Me: No

Him: Is the anything you want ?

I reply again,almost irritated

Me: No

Him: Suit yourself

I don't reply I just stare outside the window watching everything in a blur.

Few minutes later I notice he's not taking my route home

Me: You not taking me home ?

Him: No

Me: Where you taking me ?

Him: No

Me: Where's that ?

Him: No

He was just messing with me,I decide to shut my mouth and let him be.

Parking his car in front of his huge house,he tells me to get out

Didn't feel like arguing with him today

Making my way out,I follow him inside the house where we found a couple of guys watching the big screen plasma TV drinking beers

I shyly greet them ,standing awkwardly by the door before Reece tells me to follow him to his room

What was he planning on doing to me ?

Me: I think I'll stay here,go do whatever you going to do then maybe you can drive me home

I rant

Him: It wasn't a question

He says

The room suddenly becomes silent. Deciding not to cause a scene I follow him

Getting in his room,he locks the door behind  
and immediately takes me by my waist

Pushing me hard on the wall

Him: Don't.you.ever.disrespect.me in  
front.of.my.friends.ever.again..Okay ?

He whispers in my ear in a slow threatening  
voice

I quickly nod

Him: Okay ?

He yells at me making me flinch

Me: O-okay

Him: Good,I'm taking a shower then I'll drive you  
home

Not waiting for my reply,he makes his way to  
his bathroom

Sighing

I sit in a couch that was way more comfortable  
than my own bed that I ended up falling asleep

\*\*\*\*\*

I don't know how long I was out for but anyway I was woken up by two angry voices

Peeking out from the blankets

"So you not going because you want to babysit your new piece of ass ? She doesn't even want you for god sake !,I don't think she ever will after you blackmailed her into being with you. She Still hates you after you saved her from being forced into becoming a woman!,she's just an ungrateful bitch"

Some guy said

Okay,it's obvious that they were talking about me

I suddenly hear a jaw breaking punch,making me flinch as if I was the one who got the punch..whoever it is sure needs a doctor to

check it out

I heard Reece's booming voice yell at the guy. "If you ever call Alona a bitch, or any other name .I won't hesitate to blow your brains out!,brother or not ..Understood ?"

He says holding a gun to the guys head

It's his Brother ?

Now I see the resemblance

Pressing the gun further in the guys head,he hissed in pain

Guy: Okay,I f-fucken understand

Reece: And Don't you ever raise your voice at me eh ?

The guy nods,looking over Reece's shoulder

He glares at me,making me cower back in the covers that strongly smelled of Reece

I was in his bed

Reece turns to look at me, noticing now that I was awake

He looks at the guy again and tells him to leave.

Making his way to me

Him: How long were you up ?

Me: Long enough to hear you threaten to kill someone

I take my phone on the side of the table checking the time

6:35

I could say I was at the library if Oz asks or if I find my mom home

Me: C-can you please drive me home ?

Him: First get something to eat then I'll drive you back

Me: I'm n-not h-

Him: I'll force feed you if I have to,you haven't gotten anything in that flat stomach of yours in like what ?,4 hours .

He was already pissed,and I was pissing him more

Nodding my head

Me: Okay then I'll take a bite.

Getting up,I check myself for any suspicious thing

I find nothing,I'm relieved

I go to his bathroom to pee,brush my teeth and when I get back in the room

There was already a plate of food

Asking him to take a few bites just to make sure he wasn't poisoning me

He takes them and gives me the plate

I eat a few spoons,whoever cooked this



qualifies to be a chef.

When I'm done eating,He drives me home

...

[11/08, 09:17] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 10

•Note: Not edited.

Friday night

I was with Romeo in my room.

Him: Alona come on It's going to be fun

Me: No

Him: Please

He continues to beg.

He wanted me to go to a party with him and I was refusing

Me: What if something happens. ?,What if we to get into trouble ?,sothi besi yaphi ?

He rolls his eyes

Him: Stop being a coward. Nothing is going to happen..except maybe getting drunk and meeting new people

I shook my head

Him: You need to live a little,being locked up in your room reading 'books' or watching movies while everyone your age is out having fun is not nice,One day you going to have kids and they will want to know about their mom's teenage life.What are you going to tell them ? that you w  
-

Me: Okay Okay Jeez I get it

I say stooping his rant

Me: We can go,Only this once though and only if your promise that you won't get drunk and leave me alone with drunk people I don't know

Him: I promise.

He says as he jumps up from my bed and does

his victory dance,kissing my cheek and running to my wardrobe

He takes out a few clothes

Me: What do you think you doing ?

Him: Picking out something for you to wear

He says in a duh tone

Me: Hey I can do that myself !

Him: Yeah sure,I know you've got a great fashion sense but you've never been to a party before so I don't think you know what to wear

Me: I have been to a party before.

Him: Yeah ? When you were like what ..Six years old ?

I glare at him as he insults my social status.

Him: Now go freshen up,we leaving in an hour

He shooed me away

.....

1 hour+ later, We were standing outside the party house

Music blaring inside

Stench of weed, alcohol in the air

Some making out .

Me: I don't think we should be here

I say to Romeo

He ignores me, dragging me inside.

I think everyone here was having a good time

Grinding on each other

Some already passed out on the couches

Let me not bore you with the details Most of you probably know what goes down in party places.

2 hours later

6 shots

Couple of ciders

Few puffs from the hookah that was mixed with weed,I think.

I was wasted

I couldn't see Romeo anywhere and I didn't care because well I was still having fun until I started feeling dizzy and I stumbled my way up to the toilets after I got the directions from..I don't remember.

I was glad when I found no one inside,I lock the door and make my way to the sink

Splashing my face with the cold water,I sit down on the floor trying to gather myself.

Looking for my phone in my pocket,I'm relieved

when I find it

How I still had it with me ? It beats me.

Switching it on,closing my eyes as the light from it almost blinds me

Scrolling down

16 missed calls

2 voice messages

4 messages

And an incoming call right now.

Putting the phone in my ear as I answer 'hello' laughing at my stupidity because I forgot to press the answer button.

Looking for the button on the screen,I find it

I was about to say hello on the other side when I was cut off

Him: WHY DID YOU FUCKEN SWITCH YOUR PHONE ?

He shouts

Reece

Him: WHERE THE FUCK ARE YOU ?

I shrug, Remembering that he can't see me I  
giggle

Me: I-I d-on't kn- ( burp) know where the (burp)  
fuck I am.

I giggle once again

Him: Are you drunk ?

He asks flatly

Me: I-don't know a-am I ?

Him: Who are you with Alona ?

He asks almost..worried ? Or was it me and my  
drunk state

Me: Alona is Alone.

I laugh at my lameness.

Him: Where's Romeo then ?

Me: I-I don't know, probably somewhere getting laid

Him: How can he leave you alone in a place you don't know ? (shouts) just get out of there and try to find someone to give you address and don't hang. U mamele ?

Getting up supporting myself with the wall, I unlock the door and get out.

Stumbling across some few people who were drunk like me or more.

I was looking for anyone Someone who was maybe a little bit sober, which was almost impossible

I bumped into someone on my stumbling.

Enzo

Him: Wow you look h-hot

He slurs' out as he corners me on a wall

Him: It's a you t-turned out to be a whore that



rather fuck a possessive,psychotic obsessed guy over me. H-how quickly you open your legs for him when I've been with you for about a year pretending to love you just so you could lose your virginity to me ?

He says placing a kiss on the side of my neck  
"Alona!,I swear if that fucker touches you I'll kick his ass"

I hear Reece threaten on the phone before it falls down

Me: Ge-et away from me.

Enzo: Lets just find some room so I can make you moan out my name

His hand grips my butt

Me: No!

I yell at him trying to remove his hand but he wouldn't let go

Him: You've always been a stuck up bitch,One

of the reasons I decided to cheat on you. You didn't really think I was waiting for you all year long did you ?

He chuckles

Him: Surely that's what you thought, the way you were so clouded by desperation for my love you probably didn't see anything . Pathetic.

He says as he kisses the corner of my mouth, bringing my left knee up high

I watch as he falls to the ground clutching his groin.

I pick up my phone and kick his side, satisfied when I hear him groan out in pain

I run out, Thanking god as I met up with some guys on my way out who looked to be just arriving

Asking for the address, I thank them before calling it out to Reece who hadn't hang up all this while.

.....

10+ minutes later

I was almost freezing cold as I waited for Reece outside sitting on a pavement.

My eyes fluttering open, then closing against my own will ..I managed to see a pissed off Reece coming my way

Relieved to see him

Never thought I'd be able to feel that emotion, Maybe it was the traces of alcohol in my system.

Rushing to me, he takes off his leather jacket and puts it on me

Feeling grateful for the warmth, he picks me up and quickly buckles me in the front seat and

immediately drive's off

I remember him putting me in his bed

I was guessing I was in his house after I smelt the familiar scent of his cologne

Getting in behind me,he holds me around my waist..cuddling me

I let him have his moment because I Know for a fact If I was sober and thinking straight,I wouldn't even let this happen

My eyes shut close as my head hit the pillow,I was tired .

[11/08, 10:42] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 11

I woke up trying to get up when I put my hand on my forehead feeling headache come on,It felt like it was going to explode

I don't know whether I had a big head or it was a thing of the moment but Intloko yam Ibindisinda.

I hiss in pain as a quick pain comes inside my head,it leaves as it comes though

Me: Uhh it hurts

I say almost wanting to cry

"Serves you right for uhamba uyozyintya ngotywala (going and getting yourself drunk)"

Reece says as he comes in the door with a tray in hand,Cereal and a glass of water with some tablets on the side

He puts them by my side and tells me to go freshen up

I got up going to the bathroom,getting under the hot shower I took my time

Taking a shower was kind of refreshing for me but it didn't help with the hangover and I couldn't erase the memories from last night

Yeap,I somehow remember some of the events that took place last night

Getting out of the bathroom with a robe I found,Noticing the bed was already made and he was laying down on it on his back staring into thin air

Clearing my throat before I speak

Me: Can you p-please take me home,My mom and my brother are probably worried.

My voice was trembling and It was weak,I was feeling nauseous

Him:They aren't

Me: What do you mean they aren't ,w-what did

you do to them ?

He turns to glare at me

Him: You texted them saying you were spending the Weekend at Romeo's house, they were cool with it. then you texted Romeo asking him to cover for you because you spending the weekend at my house, Remember ?

I gasp at him

Me: I did no such thing

Him: Well I did

Me: I want to go h-

Him: Just sit down and start eating so that you can take the pills

Me: I'm not hungry

Him: Do you want me to fucken shove it down your throat ?

I just keep quiet

In quick reflexes he grabs me by my arm and

throws me to the bed

Taking the bowl in his hands,he fills the spoon with cereal

Bringing it to my mouth,daring me to deny him access

I slowly open my mouth,taking it..The moment I swallowed, it came back up

I couldn't stomach it..rushing to the bathroom I quickly vomit.

Getting up slowly,I rinse my mouth and drink some water

Me: I really don't want to eat ,please d-don't force me

I say quietly begging

Him: Eat atleast 3 spoons

Me: Please n-

Him: I'll bring you fruit salad then.



He says getting up and leaving the room.

I sit on the bed

He comes back with it ,forcing me to eat

I eat and this time I'm able to stomach the contents

Him: Now drink these (giving me pills) and sleep,you'll wake up feeling better then you and I are going to talk

He watches me take the pills,making sure I down them

I lay on the bed and he covers me with a warm fleece blankets and I let darkness take over.

\*\*\*\*\*

Woke up earlier that day feeling alot better than I was in the morning.

With the sudden urge to pee,I made my way to the bathroom to do my business before going

back to bed laying down once again with no means of sleep

Him: It was Foolish of you to go that party .

He starts to say.

oh God(rolling eyes)

Me: Please Don't start , I'm not in the mood

Him: You not in the mood ?

He laughs in disbelief

Him: Uyandiqhela ne ?

He was quick to get on top of me ,with a firm grip on my neck

Him: Going to a place you are unfamiliar with to get drunk and high..No plans for you to come back ! and letting that fucker touch you

Me: Every thing you saying is r-really none of your business,w-what I decide to do with w-who is none of your business

Tightening his grip

Him: None of my business ?

Me: You hurting me you Assh-

Him: I wouldn't finish that sentence Alona if I were you unless you want to see me really pissed off !

Him: You will do as I say from now on Alona..If I tell you you're spending the night with me,then you are! Just like if I tell you to stay your ass home and not be out where you shouldn't be,then you stay your ass home..Got it ?

I stayed quiet not wanting to say anything that might lead me to my death

Him: I hate it when you make me repeat myself,(getting loud)I asked if you got it!

Me: Y-Yes

Smirking at me

Him: That's my girl

Getting off me and laying down on the other side of the bed

Me: I'm not your girl

I blurt out

Him: You better shut your mouth

Me: No !.I am not your girl and I don't think I'll ever be because you know why ?,I hate you,how can you think I'll ever accept you after all you've done is cause me pain and grief ,you Forced me to break up with s-someone I love

Him: And you just discovered yesterday night that,that same person never loved you he just wanted to get into your pants..lets just say by forcing you to break up with him I also saved you from a heartbreak

Me: He didn't mean those things,he was just drunk

I defend him .

I could care less What he thought about Enzo,  
Only what I thought about him mattered..I  
chose not to believe all the things he said about  
him never loving me in the first..He was drunk  
after all he didn't know what he was saying  
Maybe he said all those things to hurt me just  
like I hurt him,he didn't mean them.

Him: Drunk words are sober thoughts Princess

Choosing to ignore this Asshole's words,  
I continue to give him a piece of my mind

Me: I'm the girl you saved from two sick  
bastards that tried to rape me ,you didn't have  
to but you did ..So why do you feel like you have  
to mistreat and control me?,don't you think it's  
unfair that you had to force me to be with you ?  
I don't feel anything but hatred,fear towards you

now how can you build a relationship with someone who feels like that towards you ? Threaten me all you want but you could never force me to love you unless my heart says otherwise.

I take a deep breath,feeling like a weight has been removed from my shoulders after I said that .

He needed to know how I felt,though he already knew .

He stayed silent like if he were taking in what I just said to him

Him: You look so fucking cute thinking that you had a say in all of this,Do you think I give a fuck that you hate me ?, there's a thin line between love and hate Princess...

Grabbing my chin,forcing me to look at him

Him: I Get what I want and when I want and you

princess is no exception.

The corner of his mouth began to curl up in a smirk

Him: Now that is all settled,lets go and get you something to eat

Leaning in,he kissed me on the lips then pulled away

My eyes begin to water -But I don't let myself cry

He grabs my waist then lifts me up.I didn't want him carrying me

Me: I can walk !

He just glared at me,Walking out of the room

Down the stairs and into what I assume was a kitchen

Setting me down on the bar

My eyes roam around ,taking in all the beauty in

front of me

Everything in here was beyond the word  
beauty,so elegant a-

Him: What do you want me to make for you ?

Turning to glare at him,I shrug

\*\*\*\*\*

I spent the rest of the day with him,arguing and  
making snide remarks directed to each other.

He took me home the following day though

[11/08, 10:42] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 12

Going to school Monday morning with the  
means to avoid Romeo all day

I was still angry at him for leaving me in that  
place



My plan was ruined though as I was coming out of my 3rd period class heading to my own to eat lunch and I heard him running after me calling out my name

Him: Alona

Ignore him

Him: Alona!

He calls out pleadingly

Don't give in, Ignore him -My inner voice encourages me

He finally catches up with me right when I'm about to get in my class

Him Blocking my way

I glare at him ,Don't know what's with me and glaring though

He looked worried.

Bringing me into a tight hug

Him: I'm so sorry Alona,I didn't mean to leave you alone with no way for you to get back home..it's just that I met this really cute guy,which I don't even remember his name now cause I was wasted and I -

I pulled away from him and shook my

Me: I knew you left me for some guy

Him: Please forgive me

He pleaded

Me: You left me alone in a place I don't know after you promised you wouldn't.

I didn't even want to go to that damn party,Now

I'm standing here with a aching heart because I met up with Enzo w-

Romeo: If you could forgive me. ?

Looking at him,I couldn't stay mad at him for long

Me: Fine

He sighs in relief

Him: Now tell,what did Enzo do

We get in class,finding an empty desk at the corner

We sit down and take out lunches,exchanging a few things before I tell him what happened that Friday

\*\*\*\*\*

The day pretty much ended quickly and I was on my way home as school has ended

Getting out the taxi I walk home

As I get near,I see two cars parked at the driveway..One car belongs to my brother and the other one..

Oh shit!

What the fuck is he doing here ?

With a quick pace,I get inside the house

I find both of them (Reece and Oz) and some guy

In the middle of something,Chatting like some old friends, each one of them holding a glass filled with brown liquid what I assumed was whiskey

They keep quiet though as they notice that I'm

in the room

My heart beat increases when I meet his smirk

Asshole

Oz: Hey little sis you're back,I made you something to eat..It's in the oven

Nodding

Me: T-thanks

I say almost stuttering.

Going to the kitchen,I take my plate and head to my room ..

Taking my phone,I quickly text Reece

-What the heck are you doing here ?

2 minutes later my phone beeps

Came to see an old friend

-Reece

What ?

Seems like you going to see my handsome face  
alot,Princess

-Reece

I scream out in frustration, Literally Burying my  
phone under my pillow

Taking off my uniform before sitting on top of  
my bed and start eating

\*\*\*\*\*

I was cooking dinner with Oz,Him fooling around.

Slapping his finger away from the pot I was stirring

Him: Ouch

He says pouting

Me: Don't do that

Him: It smells great

Me: I know but that doesn't give you the right to dip your finger in it, That finger has been in many different pots s-

He bursts out laughing,clutching his stomach

he stops to catch a breath

Him: Did you just make a sex joke ?

Me: I don't know,did I ?

I say looking up at him smirking

He ruffles my hair

He wipes fake tears on his eyes

Him: Aww (cooes) you getting smart.( pulling a serious face on) If I ever hear such things coming out of your mouth again I swear I'll cut your hair off when you sleeping

I look at him innocently

Me: I didn't say anything bad,It's you who said I-  
I was cut short by a knock at the door

Him: Go get it

Me: Why can't you go ?,don't you dare pull the ' I'm the eldest' card on me

Him: Well that's because I am

He smirks at me

I stomp my feet like a 6 year old,pouting like nobody's business



Him: Nicely done, and here I was thinking you're getting mature

I hear him say

Me: Shut up

Him: Oh I will, I'll just stuff my mouth with this delicious stew

Opening the door, I'm met with Reece's face

Him: Hey princess

Me: Just come in and shut up

I mumble

He chuckles, shaking his head

Him: Damn, You look cute

He says looking down at me, following his gaze

My eyes open in shock at what was Peeking underneath my gown

My hot pink bra and it's matching pent

I wasn't wearing anything beside those because I just got off bathing and I was lazy to look for clothes to wear.

Me: Pervert!

His deep laughter mocks me.

I run into my room face red,taking the gown off and throwing on a pair of grey gutter track pants and my white baggy vest.

Wearing my fluffy yellow SpongeBob sleeping shoes

I was about to get out to eat dinner

When My phone beeps with an incoming message

Can't get that Image out of my head

-Reece

You know what,I think I'm not hungry anymore.

Closing my door,I just get in bed and let sleep overtake me

[11/08, 10:42] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 13

Waking up at 5 am Wednesday morning to go for a run with Oz,If he was still up for it

I remember him going out last night with Reece for a "Couple of drinks" as he puts it

Wearing a sports bra and my running tights,I go to his room to see if he was awake

Opening the door,I see him sprawled on the bed with some random girl half naked

Déjà vu much ?

Shaking my head,I close the door

Taking my spray gun from my room,Off I went...

\*\*\*\*\*

Coming back an hour later

I take a quick shower then wear my uniform

Taking my school bag I Head out to eat cereal

Finding Oz standing with his eyes closed  
gulping milk from its cartoon

Me: That's disgusting

Mom gets in after me,smacking Oz on the back  
of his head for putting the milk back in the  
fridge after he just drank it from its container

Him: Ouch

He says rubbing his head from the impact.

Mom takes an apple from the basket,kissing my  
cheek

She leaves for work,she works too hard though.

Him: I thought you said we going for a run today.

?

Me: I went on my own,didn't want to wake you up you had some chick anyway ..where did you go last night ?

Him: Reece Took me to some club,we got wasted and then I came home with that chick while Reece took her friend

He says munching on a apple

Me: So what's her name,the girl who found herself in your bed this morning ?

Waiting for a moment,trying to remember .

Wait for it-

Him: It's Ni-,Natalia no Natalie or was it Natas-  
?,It starts with a N though

I shook my head at him

Me: Can you please drive me to school

Him: Sure let me get my keys

Running to his room

he comes back with the keys in hand ,he takes my bag and I follow him to his car

10 minutes later

He stops his car by the gate,his eye searching the crowd

Him: Can you get me her number,she looks like a good fuc-

Me: No,get that thought out of your mind cause I'm not doing it

He chuckles

Quickly getting out of the car mumbling"  
Womanizer" walking away before he says something

After school

I was sitting with Romeo at McDonald

Sipping on my strawberry smoothie while he

had chocolate

It's been a while since we've been here

We we chatting about random stuff when suddenly the was clearing of throat,turning around

I see Enzo I notice a fading black eye on his face and a busted lip

Him:Can I talk to you for a moment

I keep quiet

Romeo: I think that's my cue to leave.

Getting up and taking his stuff,kisses my cheek

Romeo: I'll see you tomorrow

He says leaving me with Enzo

"Traitor",I mumble

He sits were Romeo was sitting a few moments ago

Him: H-hey

Me: Hi

Awkward silence

It's has never been like this between us.

Him: I came to say sorry .The guilt is eating me alive for the things I said to you Friday night at the party a-and I miss you

He says

Deciding to ignore the last part

Me: What you said and what you did that night,Its unlike you ..I didn't expect it from you. Just go away I don't want to talk to you

Him: I can't leave again..

Me: You somehow said that you cheated on me,were you being serious or you just said it to hurt me ?



Scratching the back of his head

Looking anywhere but me,I just knew he was being serious

Him: Yes b-but It was an accident,I was really drunk and happened to want to have sex. You never wanted to do anything with me,You always made excuses..so I thought why not satisfy my needs on someone who was willing

Me: Saying I wasn't ready wasn't an excuse

I said to him,looking at him in disbelief

Him: Well I was ready

Me: You were in a relationship where we were both meant to be loyal to each other

Him: You don't get to talk about loyalty when you've just dumped me for that guy,how long has it been going for ?..where you also fucking him behind my back then when it came to me you were not ready all of a sudden ?

I back slap him,he just indirectly called me a

bitch!

Not caring about the eyes that were now on us

Me: What happened to you, it's like I don't know you anymore

Him: You never knew me from the start.

He says getting up and leaving me there stunned

\*\*\*\*\*

I was with Oz e sitting room while mom was cooking dinner.

I was trying to get my brother off my back while he pinned me down

A knee on my back and my hands held tight above my head

He was trying to get me to spit the last block of chocolate which was halfway down my throat

Mom brought it and it was our first time seeing and eating it,It was really good that's why we were currently fighting

Him: Take it out

Me: No!,I got it first

I say trying to get out of his grip

He put his finger in my mouth ,searching for it

Eww! That finger

I bit him hard causing him to hiss in pain and immediately take it out

Me: Mom,Oz is trying to kill me

I scream out

Mom: Ozamokuhle ! Let go of your sister now

She says in a strained voice,she was holding in a laugh trying to be serious

He ignores her

Mom: First one to the dining table gets the extra piece of chicken

She tries again.

He quickly gets off me and runs to the kitchen, Mom trips him and he falls down

Giving me a chance to quickly pass him and get seated first at the table

Him: Mom, you being unfair

He grumbles coming to seat next to me

Mom sets our plates in front of us, thanking her before we dug in having a small chat which ended with me and mom ganging up on Oz.

It's been a while since we sat like this, I was enjoying the moment .

After we had dinner we all went to bed.

Another Insert later

[11/08, 10:42] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 14

Following day

Oz jumps up from his bean bag

Him: Ha!, I won once again

Me: Well y-

Him: Don't even think about trying to defend yourself, I won fair and square meaning you have to wash my laundry and clean my room tomorrow.

He says with a huge smirk on his face .

My brother and I are playing some game I don't really know on his playstation in his room.

I punch his arm, angry at what he just reminded

me to do

He slams a pillow into my face

Him: Someone's a sore loser

Me: Eww,how many heads have been sleeping on that pillow ?

Him: Too many too count make sure you use bleach when you wash it,Now Get the hell out of my room I need to bath and go get mom's Grocery

Me: You using your own money

Him: Yeah and now you owe me half the money we spent yesterday

Me: What ?,No !

Him: Yes,just get out well discuss this when I get back.

Me: There's nothing to discuss,I owe you nothing

I say getting up and going to the kitchen to

wash the dishes we just made.

\*\*\*\*\*

Oz left for town later on and I was just done cleaning up .

I ran up to the bathroom to take a bath

Putting my hair up in a messy bun,I went to wear my oversized jersey,tights and my fluffy cotton wool socks.

It was raining and cold outside, besides I wasn't planning on going anywhere.

I went downstairs with my fleece blanket,grabbed already made popcorns and went with them to the sitting room were I made myself comfortable on the couch.

I was about to Take the remote from the coffee table when I heard a knock on the door

Getting up putting the popcorn bag aside

I open

Meeting Reece's smirk

Me: Oz is not here

Him: Hello to you too princess.

He says leaning in to kiss my cheek but I back away

Him: Well I'll wait for him

Me: I don't think he'll come back any moment from now

Him: More time for you and I to have a makeout session

He says passing me and getting in

Me: In your dreams

I say closing the door

Taking my fleece I head towards my room.



Making myself comfortable on my bed,I switch on my tv and watch my favorite ..

SpongeBob,turning the volume up a little bit cause the rain was making a bit of a noise outside.

Reece just budes in my room

Me: What do you want now ?

I ask almost irritated

He lay's down beside me

Him: I want to be next to you.

Me: You tired of your whores now you want to mess with me ?

He looks at me

Him: Ingenaphi le uyithethayo ?,what are you even talking about right now ?

Me: You..Oz ,that night you went out..Both of you got to come home with some chicks now

why don't you go to her and leave me alone ?

Him : Are you jealous ?

Was I ?..No

Me: What no ! I just meant that you got some chick,she was willing to be with you so I -I don't understand what you still want from me when you could have had her .

Was I even making sense ?

Him: Well I want you

He says taking my hand in his

He looks me straight in the eyes

Snap out of it Alona.

I snatch my hand from his

Me:Get out, Oz might be on his way back and I

don't want him finding you in my room and in my bed

Him: So you don't want me to get out, it's just that you're afraid of your brother ?

He asks smirking at me

Me: W-What ? No stop twisting my words, I n-  
(stopping mid sentence) just please leave

Him: First give me a kiss

Me: No !

Him: Oh then your brother will find me here on your bed..infact

He gets up and gets under the blankets this time

Him: Under your sweet smelling blankets

Me: I don't care, I'm still n-

Cutting me short

Him: Do you know the first thing that he'll think ?

I look at him,wiggling his eyebrows

Me: Eww,what ? No ! Hell no

He chuckles

Him: Then he'll tell your mom

I glare at him

Him: T-

Me: Ok stop,I'll do it

Him: You'll do what ?

He says looking at me smiling

Me: It

Him: Say it

Me: I'll kiss you

Him: Put 'want' in that sentence

I take a deep breath trying to hold in my anger

Me: I want to kiss you

I say in one breath,I swear I've already turned a

dark shade red

Him: Wow,I know I've always had girls throwing themselves at me but I never thought you'd be one of them princess

Me: Can we get this done so you can get out of my room ?

Him: I know you can't wait to taste my lips again Princess as much as I can't wait to suck on yours,but lets save it for tonight.

Me: Huh ?

Him: You sleeping at my house tonight

Me: What ?,No I'm not!

I screech

Him: Yes you are ,or I'll sneak into your room tonight and sleep with your. I swear I'll snore so loud that your mom will wake up and come check it out

Me: You wouldn't dare

Him: Dare me, I'll make sure to only have my boxers on holding you from behind..Nc Nc ,your mother will have a heart attack when she sees her d-

Me: Enough! I-I'll sleep over,just stop

Him: Sure

"Manipulative Asshole" I mumble under my breath

Him: What was that ?

Me: Nothing

Him: Thought so too

He says kissing my cheek before getting up and leaving my room.

I wipe my cheek with the back of my hand.

Asshole

\*\*\*\*\*

Oz arrived later on and I went to help him sort out the groceries,I mean I sorted them out by myself because he decided to go with Reece 'somewhere' I shouldn't know.

Deciding to cook early

Macaroni and cheese for supper

I was done an hour later and I dished out,putting Oz and mom's food in the oven while I went to eat mine in my room .

I texted Mom telling her that I'm sleeping over at Romeo house.

She never had a problem with my friendship with Romeo because she knew that he was gay so chances of me and him doing something when we slept over at each other's houses were zero.

After a few minutes later she replied

-Ok I'll see you tomorrow .

I also texted Ozamokuhle

Then I texted Romeo to cover for me

Him: Don't have too much fun,Use protection  
..we don't want you to get pregnant yet  
Although you two would make cute babies

Me: What,Eww No! We not doing anything  
together

Romeo: Yeah..sure

He texted back

Me: Believe what ever

I text him

Finishing my food,I go rinse my plate

As if on cue,my phone rings



Wiping my hands on a napkin I check the caller id

Reece

I don't answer

He tries to call a few times till he gives up

Well I thought so until I heard a knock at the door,he lets himself in

He appears with his phone in hand glaring at me,he calls me while I'm in front of him

and My phone rings

Shit !

Him: Uyandinyela kodwa wena.

He says putting his phone in his pocket

Reece: Masambe Alona

Me: I really d-

Reece: Alona

He says warningly

Walking out to my room to take some of my stuff.

Heading out, I lock the door behind me and get in his car slamming the door.

[11/08, 10:42] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 15

Sunday morning Reece drove me home

I wasn't planning on going to church, I did say I didn't go often after all.

Mom left for church though

So here I was eating cereal cause I refused to eat at Reece's house.

"Remember our deal ?"

I turn to look at Oz

Me: What deal ?

I knew what he was referring to

Him: Do you really want me to remind you ?

He asks with a smug look

Him: You have to clean my room,change my bedding and wash my laundry

Me: I'll do it some other day

Him: Ah-Ah we agreed on you doing it today

I sigh

Me: Fine

I say getting up and putting my bowl in the sink

Going to his room I open the door,there's nothing much to do.

I sigh in relief

Me: I think I need some gloves to change your bedding

I yell for him to hear

Him: I don't have any I guess you gonna have to use your hands

He says laughing.

He was enjoying this

I shake my head in disapproval but I start changing his bedding.

Removing the Blankets I come across an already used condom.

Yeses

\*\*\*\*\*

After I was done with his bedding

I picked up some few clothes and went to put them in the washing machine.

About an hour later It was done and I was going out to hang it up in the washing,passing Reece and Oz at the sitting room.

When I get back from hanging the washing,I go up to his room to sort out his clothes in the wardrobe

I was almost done when a thought crossed my mind

Taking out a few of his clothes and head with them to the washing machine

I put them in and pour half a bottle of bleach.

I watched the water change into some colour as his clothes were ruined.

Smiling in satisfaction,I call out for him.

He comes in seeing the almost empty bottle of bleach

His eyes almost pop out

Him: Did yo-

He doesn't finish as he rushes towards me to see the damage

Him: My Favourite je-,You did it on purpose!

He almost screamed at me

Me: Yeah,you woke me up with ice cold water Friday Remember ..you didn't think I was gonna let it go did you ?

Him: I apologized and you forgave me !

Me: Well I did but now,I was bored

I said using the line he used on me Friday morning when he decided to shower me with ice cubes

Me: I'm really sorry,forgive me ?

I say as I run out laughing,he was ready to pounce on me

I ran into my room and quickly locked the door behind me

" She just bleached my clothes"

I hear him say to Reece.

Reece chuckles before saying something

I tune them out and get on my bed to take a nap cause I was tired.

\*\*\*\*\*

Woken up by a knock on my bedroom door

I get off and the bed and went to open.

"Your mom says you have been locked in your

room since she got back from church"

Romeo says getting in and throwing himself on my bed

Me: Yeah,Oz wants to kill me

Him: What did you do this time ?

I start telling him..

Romeo and I were currently chilling at the park

People watching,when some chick passed by glaring at me

I noticed it was Enzo's girlfriend,the one I've once exchanged a few insults with at school

Me: Yintoni ? Wandi'jonga Ingathi ndingu K wakho.

Her: Andina K onje ngawe.

Me: Damn right awunaye ,ndimhle gqith for uba nguye



Romeo bursts out laughing and the chick continue with her way leaving us in fits of laughter .

Catching our breaths and continue to sit in a comfortable silence.

Until Romeo decide to break it

Romeo: Hee yaz I was about to ask what happened when you 'Slept' over at Reece house  
He asked making the word slept more clearer  
I looked at his grinning face

Me: Nothing

I shrugged

Romeo: Sure,you spend the night at a hot guy's house and you do ' Nothing ' .

He used that tone that said I know you are lying

Me: You don't believe me ? I swear I'm telling you the truth,we just sat there and bickered

back and forth while we had some staring contest

I said like it was a normal thing to do

Romeo: You didn't even kiss ?

Me: Why would we ? It's not like we are in a relationship or something

Romeo: You two are just plain weird then

Me: I hate him

Romeo: There's a thin line between love and hate

Me: That's what he said

I turn to look at him at the same time he did and we burst out laughing.

Later on I accompanied him to catch a taxi home because it was getting dark

I know its kinda short.Boring

Sorry

[11/08, 10:42] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 16

I came home from school Monday later than usual because I had to go to the library to finish off some assignment.

Taking my key from my school bag I open and get in closing the door behind

I go straight to my room because I didn't feel like eating

Taking my uniform off Quickly then changing into a baggy shirt only before throwing myself on my bed taking a nap that turned out with me falling asleep.

Waking up later when I felt someone Shaking me to wake up

Groaning and burying my head under the pillow  
"Go away" I Mumbled to whoever.

"I'm currently enjoying the view right now so  
why would I ?"

A deep voice answers me back

Shit!

Slowly peeking my head out,I see Reece  
smirking at me before my eyes trailed to my  
body.

I screech before jumping out of bed and Quickly  
pull my shirt down

While I was sleeping it somehow managed to  
ride up exposing the side of my thigh and upper  
body ending just below my bra line,how that  
happened ? It beats me.

I heard him chuckle.

I cover myself up with a fleece

Him: I'll see what's underneath there some day anyway, why are you even hiding it ?

I ignore his remark and look for something to wear, finding some track pants and manage to wear them while I had the fleece wrapped around me

Lifting my eyes to glare at him, He watched me in amusement.

He came towards me, snatching the blanket off me he threw it on my bed.

Snaking his hand underneath my shirt, he rested it on top of my bra.

Moving it under so he could touch my breast

I was uncomfortable

I put my hand on his arm to pull him away

Him: Get your hand off me!, I can touch you in any way I want when I want. got it ?

He said in his low deep threatening voice

I moved my hand away from him

Him: That's my girl

He says taking his hands off me.

I sigh in relief

Stepping away from him

Me: I don't know how many times i have told you that I am not your girl , you could have any girl you want but yet you want the one who doesn't want you,why did you choose me to torment ?.You saved me only to throw it in my face and use it against me ,why ?

Him: You may feel like I'm cruel and you may hate me b-

Me: I do hate you

Him: So you've told told me and I've told you that I don't give a rats ass because I want you

Me: And I don't

Him: And I don't care

Me: You are a psychotic obsessed Asshole and I -

I didn't get to finish my sentence because the next thing I know I'm being slammed into the wall, making my back hurt

I wince in pain

Him: What did I fucken. Say to you about insulting me ?

He says so low I almost didn't hear him that is how I know it was all jokes aside

Tears roll down my cheeks

Me: I-I'm sorry

Bringing his hand up, I flinched. Looking up at him I could almost see hurt mask his features

His thumb went under my eyes to wipe away the tears.

Him: I don't want to hurt you but if you keep pushing me then I will

Taking a deep breath

Me: Oz might c-

Him: He's not coming back until tomorrow.

Me: I'm going to school tomorrow so I need to get to bed

I said trying to get him to leave

Him: Uba ufuna ndihambe Alona,yitsho.

I swallow the lump that was forming in my throat.

He goes to make himself comfortable on my bed

Him: I'm staying here for a bit then

Me: Suit yourself

I say before making my way out to go start with cooking

Him: Where you going ?

Me: I don't have to answer to you



Him: Oh yes you do , pretty much everything you do concerns me

Me:You must be my imaginary father then

Him: No but one thing I'm sure about is that I'm your manfriend(partner)

Me: No you not remember?,I don't want you and I certainly d-

Him: You may not want me and I don't care,but I will always take care of you unlike your lying cheating Enzo

Me: Enzo loved me h-

Cutting me short once again

Him: He did ?

Laughing in disbelief

Him: He was fucking some other whores on the side while he claimed to love you.

Swallowing the lump in my throat,I didn't wanna hear no more

Him: truth hurts, but at least you know now he never did love you and you just gotta accept it.

Cupping my face in his hands, he kisses my forehead

Him: I know you don't want me but I'd never pretend to be something that I'm not, I'm a heartless cold 'Asshole' as you like to call me and I'm not going to hide it.

Reece was somehow right, he is he'd always showed me his true colors from the beginning while Enzo was a wolf in a sheep's clothing.

Was I that blinded by love that I didn't see it ?, course I was because I thought he would be the last person to think would ever cheat on me

How stupid can also be to think he was perfect ?

That there could be a thing as a Perfect guy, Reece proves it with his actions that there is no such

I may hate him and may have to deal with his possessiveness and threats but Atleast I know he'll never pretend to be someone his not,his a asshole straight to my face not behind my back.

Me: I need you to leave

Him: No will do princess

Me: Please

I try to beg as tears start to roll out of my eyes.

Him: Wipe those tears away from your eyes,now

He says sternly

But I don't do what he wants me to do

Him: Im not going to repeat myself Alona.

Grabbing me by my arm,he stares down at me

Him: Now!

He yells as his grip on my arm tightens

Quickly wiping them away,I can't help it as they poured out more

Him: I'm not going to say sorry about hurting your feelings,It was either I get it through your head or I let you be in denial . You can't avoid betrayal because you don't want to get 'hurt',you need to take whatever life throws at you sometimes and be able to face it. Now Wipe.them.off.

Wiping every trace of tears

He put his finger under my chin,making me look up at him while he stared down at me

Him: Awuse Pink(i) nje

He teases me

Ignore him

Him: You're short

Ignore him

Him: I want to make you my wife one day So I'd

fuck you senseless all day long and come back to hit it later on knowing you waiting for me in bed.

He continues

Me: Eww! WHAT ?

I screech at him scrunching my nose in disgust

He laughs at me

I didn't want to hear anything nasty coming from his mouth no more, turning around to go the bathroom to wash my face

He follows me

Me: Why are you following me. ?

Him: It's hard not to, You have a huge sexy ass and I enjoy the view so why wouldn't I ?

Turning to glare at him

Me: Why are you like this ?

He shrugs and I just shook my head in annoyance

Standing in front of the sink,I open the tap and wait for the hot water

Splashing my face with it after.

.....

[11/08, 10:42] +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 17

I was now in the kitchen cooking something simple and quick.

Reece was still here and wouldn't quit bugging me.

Him: Why are you quiet ?

Me: Thinking of ways to kill you and make sure no one finds out

Him: Maybe you should ask me for some ideas

Me: Oh your an expert,How can I forget

I look at him as he's staring at me..

Him: Masingaqhelani Alona.

He says his face now all serious.

Me: Xolo.

I say

He doesn't say anything

His phone suddenly rings, breaking the silence

Answering it

Him: Ya, Ndihleli nalo mntana.

Hehe, Nalo Mntana ?

Him: Xelela lonja ba ayindi niki lewei ,izo dibana nam and andizuthetha kanintsi ndizayi dubula inye. Xo

Hanging up, He looks at me

I look at him and Shake my head, he has no shame.

Him: Yinto ?(What)

Me: Ayonto.

I didn't want to say something that might piss

him off,not that'll help though because with him  
Everything pisses him off

Him: Ikhona into ofuna uyithetha  
Alona,thetha.( there is something you want to  
say Alona,say it )

He says matter of fact

Me: Have you got no remorse ?,the things you  
do to peo-

Him:I don't bullshit when it comes to my deals  
or running my crew .Anyone who Bullshits with  
me will pay for it ,that's the way I am Princess  
get used to it.

Waiting for a second

Me: I don't have to get used to anything you Ass  
-

Him: I dare you to finish that last word

He says,his face stoic

He comes towards me and I take a few steps



back.

Grabbing me by my waist,he puts pressure on it

Me: S-Sorry I didn't mean to

Him: That sorry won't be enough one day when I completely lose my temper with you.

He says before taking his phone that he put in the table and makes his way out

Waiting for a few minutes before I go lock after him.

.....

Struggling to wake up the following day

Mom: Alona vuka or you gonna be late

Me: Just 2 more minutes

Mom: 2 minutes that are going to turn into another 2 minutes then an hour and you'd be dead asleep,Khawuvuke maarn

I bury myself more into my warm blankets

Mom: I made your favorite pancakes

Me: No will do

Mom: I also made bacon

Me: Nope

Silent for a minute

Mom: I'll call Oz and you know it won't be a pleasant way to wake up

Jumping out of bed

Me: I'm up !

She laughs at me as she makes her way out of my room

45 minutes later I had gotten ready for school.

I was now on my way to eat breakfast.

Finding Oz already stuffing a couple of pancakes with whipped cream on his mouth.

They looked good.

Sitting down on the chair,putting my school bag beside me

I open the lid of the plate that was in front of me

Oz gets up running out

Finding the plate that supposed to have my pancakes empty,Now I know why he just ran out

Me: Mom !

Mom: Ozamokuhle !

Oz: What ?

He answers with his mouth full on the other side.

and that's how my day started,with me having to eat a snack bar for breakfast because my brother accidentally ate my breakfast..sure

like I believe him.

I Was pretty much grumpy all day long

And It was worse when I was dying to go to  
lunch,leaving Romeo behind

Pushing my way in the crowd till I bumped into  
someone

Looking up to one of Enzo's friends.

"What the fuck is wrong with you ?,Watch where  
you going you bitch"

He said getting all angry with me

Me: I'm sorry

Him: Sorry ? Is that what you also said to to  
Him after you did what you did ?

Me: I don't know what you talking about.

I said confused

Now there was a crowd forming around us.

Great just great. This day keeps getting better and better NOTE THE SARCASM.

Him: Stop acting stupid you little bitch,why did you break up with Enzo !?

I stared at him without saying anything

Him: Why ?to be with that guy ? where you fucking him (Reece) behind his back ?

Me: That's not what happened,I loved Enzo with all my heart ..

Him: Funny way of showing it,good luck with being his side whore

Slap

He just slapped me

Bringing my fist up to connect with his face,I don't pay no attention to the pain that shoots in my hand.

Before he could do something though,there was

suddenly someone in the middle..blocking us  
from tearing each others head

.....

I ended up at the nurse room,because I had  
strained my hand when I delivered that punch.

Nurse: Give it a week,it should heal as long as  
you take care of it..I have a letter of  
recommendations written for you,you should  
take it to the clinic..but this ointment will do for  
now.

She said as she bandaged my hand

I nod in understanding

Her: Never had a case where a girl punches a  
boy before,you must be pretty strong because I  
also had to nurse his nose.

Smirking in satisfaction,I grew up with Oz after  
all

Her: You Mother is waiting for you by the parking lot

here's your pass out, the principal gave it to me .

I nod as I took it.

Suspended for 2 days

It might not seem much, but for a grade 12 learner it was something big.

But atleast I had Romeo surely he was going to bring me notes

Walking out of there gate after I showed the guard the slip

I get inside mom's car and she drives off

She drops me home and goes back to work saying she'll deal with me later when she gets home

' Uzofika ndilele' I Mumbled to myself with a

smug look

Her: Ekugqibeleni Awuvumele kanga uye esikolweni. I could ask for a day off ngomso ndihlale nawe imini yonke ndikuthuke, Ucimb' untwsampu wena.

Yeses

....

[11/08, 10:43] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 18

Getting inside the house

I find Oz sitting alone ,a glass of soda in hand and talking on his phone .

He immediately hangs up when he sees me

Him: Wow,you back early

I don't answer him

Taking me in,his eyes land to my bandaged fist



Him: You got in a fight

He stated smugly

Me: Yeah

I said as I made my way to him, sitting beside him after I had taken my school bag off

Him: Umtsale ngamabele ?

He asks as he takes a sip from his glass

Me: It was a guy

I say, choking on his drink

He looks at me and chuckles in amusement

Him: Did you beat his ass ?

Me: Yeah

Patting my back

Him: Good

Weird brother I have huh ?

Me: But now, Mom is going to be on my case when she comes back.

I think I'll just bake her favourite muffins

Him: As if they'll help

Me: I'm sure they'll do their part ,I'll be up in my room for a nap.Wake me up later.

I see him grin

Me: You know,forget the last part I'll just set an alarm.

He chuckles

Running up to my room,I take off my school uniform and change into some random clothes before getting on top of the bed.

Waking up later that day

I had woken up and went to the kitchen

Checking the ingredients so that I could start baking ,The were a few meaning I had to go to the shops

"Oz" I call out for him

Him: Yinto ?

Him: Awuna 'bhuti' Khona ?

Me: Which one should I answer first ?

Quiet

Me: Can you Accompany me to the shops,I need to get some ingredients

Him: Woyika nto unгахambі wedwa ?,it's not like ku late oh woyika lantwana uyi khabileyo ?

Me: No b-

Him: Lets just go to town,I'm lazy to cook so we can also get takeaways.

Me: Sure , let me just change into something decent.

I say to him running up to my room

.....

After we did the Mini shopping we went back home.

I was about to go to the kitchen to start baking when I got a phone call from Reece saying his outside.

I had walked pass Oz who was still busy with his laptop

Him: Uyaphi ?

Shit.

Think.

Me: I uh-m forgot to buy vanilla essence, I'm going to get it at the shop

Him: Oh.

I sigh in relief.

Walking out and to Reece's car that was parked a few houses away

I get in slamming the door with force

Him: Hello to you too.

Me: Undibizele nto ? , make it quick Couse ndishiye imbiza.

Lie.

Him: Do I need a reason for uzobona umntu wam ?

Rolling my eyes, I huff in annoyance.

He pinches my cheeks and I swat his hand away rubbing the spot.

Him: Yintoni ngo esandlen Alona ?

He asks in his deep usual voice looking at my bandaged fist

I shrug.

Him: Damn it Alona !

He bangs the steering wheel

Me: I- I just got in a fight.

Him: Fight ? With who ?

Me: Enzo's friend.

Him: For ntoni Alona ?

Me: It doesn't matter its sorted now.

Him: Alona.

He says,warningly.

Me: I accidentally bumped into him he got Pissed,He called me a few names and then slapped me. I punched him and we both ended up at the nurse room,got suspended and that's it.

He smirks at me.

Him: You Punched him ?

That's the highlight of the sentence for him, Ignoring the important part. Suspension

Him: Then you Even but You tell me when they bother you again.

Me: I won't

I look at him glaring at me

Me: We both know what you going to do.

Him: What ?

Me: Shoot them in between their eyes

I say sarcastically

He smirks at me

Him: The fact that you know me so well warms my heart,Princess. But I won't , I'll just have a word.

He smirks at me.

Me: Can I go now

Him: Hamba

Oh that was easy.

Opening the door I get out heading home.

Oz: Did you get vanilla essence ?

Me: Vanilla essence ?

I look at him confused for a minute

Me: Oh u-uh No, they don't have it but I'll do without it

He nods.

I had baked the muffins, 2 baking pans meaning there were 12 of them

Later

We were fixing the table because mom would arrive any minute from now.

Oz: You know mom is still going to kill you right ?

Me: Please just stop reminding me

Oz: She might even take your phone-

Me: Just shut up Will you ?

He laughs

Hearing a car park outside, I quickly go wait in front of the door

Wanting to welcome mom with a line that I've



been practicing all a few lines all this time just to soften her

The door Opens

Me: Mama yazi b-

But before I can go on with my rant

I notice that she wasn't alone, Behind her was a man

A Dark-skinned guy in a suit, Tall and a little bit buff. You know like one of those people who work out and have visible muscles not those bulging ones

Me: Uh..um Molweni

I say politely

" Has mom killed you y..et "

Oz trails off as he also takes in the guy.

It was unusual for mom to bring a guy home, We were a bit shocked and curious

Mom: Um babies, this is Lungelo. Lungelo this is

Ozamokuhle and Alona

Lungelo: I have heard alot about you guys,nice to finally meet you

He said smiling

Awkward.

Mom: I'm not going to beat around the bush, Nibadala ningaka . Lungelo and I are in a..u u-um relationship

WOW

We still kept Quiet sino Oz because I think we both had nothing to say,Not knowing how to react .

.....

Pretty much the whole dinner was just awkward.

Nothing much was said,just exchanged a few awkward conversations..I guess we were pretty much trying to process the fact that we might be seeing another man often in the house

Lungelo: These are nice

He said taking a bite of the muffin and swallowing.

Mom: I'm sure she (me) made them,It's her way of trying to get me to not give her an earful of the fact that she got suspended in school

Lungelo: Suspended ?

Mom: Yeah,she got in a fight.

Lungelo: She looks too cute for fighting.

He says

Cute ?

I stare at him and the next thing I know we have a mini staring moment,licking his bottom lip..Looking at me with a mischievous glint in his eyes I quickly look away.

Mom: Very unpredictable, both of them are unpredictable.

Excusing myself from the table,I just had to go

to my room

I didn't feel Comfortable all of a sudden.

Oz: Chill out mom is not going to bite your head anymore.

Me: I-I um Think my hand is Starting to hurt,I might have used it alot (faking a laugh) I forgot that I had to take it easy on it..I just want to put an ointment

Oz: Okay want me to help you also massage it ?

Me: No I'll be fine,You can stay and enjoy your food bro.I know there's nothing better than that for you to do right now, I bet you were really hoping that I decline your offer so that you can just focus on it.

Oz: You really know me

Me: Pig

Him: Tomboy

Me: As-

Mom: Alona !

Oz: Awukayi gqibi le uygxothelwe eskolweni ke phof.

He said pressing, hoping mom would really bring it up in full force this time around.

Me: I really need to go

I said running out and in to my room and lock myself .

[11/08, 10:43] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 19

Friday.

My two days of suspension were over and I had to go back to school.

I was already sorted with my school work because Romeo helped me by bringing all work they were doing in class.

Now here I was inside the school premises with

my mom because she had to sign some stuff to confirm that I was was back.

After all that process,I was sent to class and it was already the 2 period .

Sitting next to Romeo,I could feel a couple of eyes on me

Scanning all of them and their eyes immediately look away from me,I was looking for a specific person an- oh there he is glaring at me with his other black/blue eye

Smirking in satisfaction before turning to look at the board and copy down the notes.

First break and I was sitting under a tree with Romeo eating our lunch

Him: I have some Avocado sandwich if you want

He offered

Me: How can I say no ?

Taking it from him,I take a bite and moan in satisfaction

Looking back at him to tell him how good it was,he was already looking at me with a grin

Me: Yinto ?

Him: Is that the sound you make when you doing the deed with Reece ?

He asks

Me:what ? ,Uphambene .I'm st-

Him: Don't get so defensive I was just wondering

Me: Just shut up

I groan out in frustration as he laughs at me.

Him: Do you have any plans with him tomorrow.  
?

Me: No I haven't seen him in about 3 days

Him: You even counting

I glare at him,raising his hands in surrender

Me: I'm actually glad.

Him: So maybe we can go to the beach ?

Me: Sure why not

I say giving him a huge smile.

Me: what about transport ?

I say giving him a huge smile.

Him: Don't worry my mom's not working tomorrow so she's available,she already agreed anyway

Me: I'll make a few salads then

We discuss things we need to do and the bell ring indicating end of lunch.

After school I was waiting for Oz to come pick



me up when I saw Enzo and some chick beside him,his friends behind him coming my way.

Now standing in front of me

Enzo: I heard you punched my friend

I scoff

Me: And what are you going to do about it ?

Enzo: Nothing actually,I just wanted to know where do you get the guts to raise your hand when you can't even open your legs

His friends laugh

Me: Nimuncu yazi ?,Here I was thinking we were going to have some action kanti you just another bunch of girls wanting a confrontation with me.

Looking at their shocked faces,I'm about to side step them when Enzo pushes me back,making me fall back because one of

his friends thought it was funny to put their leg

out to trip me.

" Yinto le shit niyenzayo ?"

Oz was suddenly beside me.

Without saying anything,they sprint off the other direction because oh well it was Oz in front of them. Who wouldn't ?

He helps me up

Him: Zezaphi ezantwana ?

Me: Around pha kuthi estratweni

Him: Uzon-

Me: Just please leave it Oz,It'll make matters worse if you do something to them.I'm sure they'll stay away now that they know you might be involved

Him: I swear I w-

Me: Oz please ?

I beg to him

Him: Fine! But even if they bump into you accidentally, you tell me

Me: You just said it will be an accident

Him: I don't care you tell me

Me: I will

I say smiling at him and his overprotectiveness

Getting in his car, he drives off heading home

•

Dropping me home, saying he's going out somewhere he'll be home in a few minutes

Me: Oz

Him: I'm not going kweza ntwana

I look at him

Him: I swear

Me: I'll believe you, u Mama ukhona ?

I ask as I see the front door open

Him: Ha.a

Me: Then who's there ?

I ask him confused

Him: Your Stepfather.

With that he drives off leaving me standing there

Heading inside,I find my so called stepfather sitting on the couch

His feet hanged on the coffee table while he had an apple ,grey laptop on top of him typing whatever

I murmur a low hello

He turns to look at me

Him: Hey baby girl,can you make me something to drink ?

Go make it yourself.

Of course I didn't say it to his face,Saying a few curse words inwardly

I nod my head

Passing him to go to the kitchen,I couldn't help noticing the few tattoos on his back as he was wearing a muscles vest showcasing his muscles I thought.

Putting my bag at the kitchen bar

•

I was stirring a cup of tea when I felt someone presence

Turning around to see Lungelo staring at me,he was standing at the doorway his arms folded in his chest

His eyes now meeting mine after they were looking below m- No its probably just my imagination.

He comes towards me,standing beside me

I hand him his cup of tea

Him: I prefer coffee,strong and dark like me

He says,Deciding to ignore his last lines

Me: Well then you could have told me before

Him: You could have asked

He says not backing down,wanting to make sure he says something last.

When he sees that I wasn't going to answer him,thar he won..He made his way out

Pouring the tea down the sink,I make the 'coffe' that he wanted

Going to the sitting room to give it to him,I was to turn to go up to my room when he asked me to stay

Sitting down on the couch opposite his

I watch as he takes a sip from the cup,settling it down before looking at me

Him: You'd make a good wife one day this coffee is great

Ok.

Him: How old are you ?

Me: 17

Him: Oh,do you have a boyfriend. ?

What ?

Me: And you asking all these questions because ?

He shrugs

Him: You going to see alot of me around,the least I can do is get to know you that way we can get along

Me: What does me having a boyfriend got to do with it ?

Him: I don't know why you making it to be such a big deal,just answer a yes or a no

Me: No

Him: Oh ,so are you a v-

Me: No No No sir you can't ask me those type of questions,No I refuse

He chuckles

Him: Don't call me sir,you making me look and feel old

Me: How old are you

Him: 38

I couldn't help but laugh at him,My mothers Ben ten

Me: Then what are you doing with my mom ?

He shrugs

Him: Fucking

I stare at him in shock

Him: What. ? You just asked what I'm doing with her

Me: I-I didn't mean it that way

Him: You meant like I'm young and she's a few years older than me ?,she doesn't even look like her age.Pretty hot if you ask me so why not f- ?



Me: I think I've heard enough already, I'm going to my room

Quickly getting up and running to my room before he says something.

I change into some random clothes before getting on top of my bed for a nap.

[11/08, 10:43] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 20

Waking up the following day with a body hangover, you know ? When your body is tired when you've been working hard the previous day

Going to the bathroom to do my morning routine

I'm not in the mood to play happy family today so I'm not going for breakfast.

Tidying up my room, I was in the middle of fixing

my bed when I heard someone trying to open the door Jangling the door handle

" Alona"

I sigh in relief when I heard my brothers voice  
Going to open.

I go to hug him until he brushes me off

Him: Heyi ndiyeke wena. Whatever it is that you want, Andinayo

Me: Who said I wanted something from you, Is it now a crime to show love to your sibling ?

Him: Just come out with it, what do you want ?

Me: I swear I'm not gonna ask you for anything

He gives me that ' yeah right you not ' kinda look, noticing that I'm serious

He looks at me skeptically as if trying to figure something out

Him: You okay ?

Me: Yeah why ?

Him: You just acting weird, Since when do you lock your door ?.

Since mom's man started living in this house ,I find myself uncomfortable around him.

I don't say that though.

Me: Since you once woke me up with a bucket of ice cold water, who knows what you gonna wake me up with next time ?

I lie easily

Him: (Laughs) Uselapho ?

Me: It's not only accidents that are traumatising you know ?

Him: You Overreacting, Aren't you coming for breakfast ?

I shook my head No

Him: Why ?

Me: I'm not in the mood.

Him: You ? Not in the mood for food ?

Me: Yeap Now get out of my room and leave me to Clean in peace

Him: What's up with you ?

Me: What ?

Him: What's bothering you ?

Me: There's n-

Him:Don't lie to me, again.

I really didn't wanna cause any awkwardness in this house,but I have to get it out of my chest

Me: Lungelo

I murmur out.

Him: What did he do ?,did he try to hurt you ? I'm going to kill that son of a bitch

He shouts as he makes his way out ,Quickly stopping him.I tug at him to get inside before shutting the door.

Me: He didn't hurt me

Him: Are you sure you not ly-

Me: I'm not, I swear

He looks at me for a moment trying to figure out if I'm lying or not.

Him: Then what is it ?

Me: I- It's just I feel uncomfortable around him , I quiet don't like the way he talks, looks at me(sigh) Maybe I'm being paranoid. Its probably nothing maybe its me not used to having a father figure like kind of a guy in my life

Him: Don't hiding your feelings and stop brushing them off , you follow your gut

I nod in understanding.

Me: I don't trust him

I say as I start to fill him in on the last couple of conversations I had with Lungelo.

When I'm done

His all worked up

His jaw twitching,Running his hand through his hair in frustration.

Him: I'll have a word with him

Me: Oz No don't,please ?

Him: Why ?

Me:I don't want him running off to mom and the next thing they fighting because of me .

Him: But h-

Me: Please ?

Him: I'll just tell him to stay away from you.

Me: Oz,you making this out to be a big deal.

Him: I'm making this a big deal ? Eziny' izinto suzi thatha kancinci Alona.

Me: Just please let it be,If he ever does or says something that is going to make me uncomfortable. I promise I'll tell you but please just don't confront him about this

Mumbling under his breath something that I couldn't quite catch

He nods

Him: Okay

I had a feeling he was just saying it for me to get me to not try to stop him in doing something irrational

.....

That Afternoon,I was sitting on top of my bed reading some novel that I got at the school library.

I was so engrossed in the book that I got startled by someone pushing the door open with force

Quickly looking up finding Romeos hard glare

Me: Ucimba kukwakho apha ?(You think this is your house)

Him: Kutheni ungayi phenduli i phone ?Ungase

uyigunxulele e tobhini nje xa ikudikile ?(Why aren't you answering your phone ,Why don't you Flush it down the toilet if you're tired of it ?)

Me: Wow! Hello to you too ,I'm fine thanks for asking and how are you ?

Him: Do you know how worried I was ?, Into eyenzwe yi boyfriend yakho izolo was a bit scary in fact he is scary / intimidating and indlela omke ngayo ,sogqiba ungaphenduli phone. I thought ukukrwiche wanya and buried you in the middle of nowhere,Besizo qala ngaph ukugrumbana nemingxunya ? And -(blah blah)

He rants on that I ended up laughing

I alwaysed found it funny when he tried acting pissed

Him: You think this shit is funny ? Qhekre Amazinyo Uyanyuba Kumnandi ?

Quickly clearing my throat and trying to master a straight face



Me: I'm really sorry for switching my phone off, please forgive me ? I was avoiding u Reece

Him: Huh ?

Me: We just had a mini fight, I confronted him about what he did back at the beach. I ended up sneaking out Of his house when he was in the bathroom.

I tell him what went down yesterday.

Him: Maybr you could talk him out of his possessiveness ,what he did back there was all cute and sexy when he got worked up but it was unnecessary

Me: Talk ?,He doesn't know how to talk all he knows is to threaten and state facts and you just got to follow and let his final word be final or there's gonna be 'punishment' as he says

Him: What kinda punishment ?(wiggling his eyebrows) lie flat on your stomach while hand cuffed to the bed in your naked glory like some

Fifty shades of grey Erotic Sex Scene ?

Me: Get.Out.Of.My.Room

I say slowly and threateningly

He bursts out in laughter,He thinks it's funny ?

I pounce on him,Strangling the shit out of him

.....

Later that day when Romeo left

I had started cooking.Ibi ndim no Oz

Mom would be here any moment though

I was done and now I was dishing out when my phone vibrates in my pocket ,pulling it out

It was a text from Reece,sighing in annoyance

I don't delete it like I did with the few others I open it

- Jonga mntana ndini,If you don't come out right now ,Wenze sure andizu bubona obo buswana

bakho cause ndizo kwenzela kakubi .-

Mxm.

I'm good at playing hide and seek,I'm sure I'll make a pretty good job at staying out of his sight.

-I'm with my family right now and its pretty late I'm going to school tomorrow so andinalo ixesha for wena ,go bother your sluts uyeke 'umntana' lo undim-.

I press the send button

Where did I get the nerve Anyway ? Shrugging I'll off.

We were pretty much done with dinner,I was just done washing the dishes

I thanked god for Lungelo didn't show up today,Apparently he had some paper work he

had to get done according to mom's explanation.

Mom had already gone to bed,Oz was going out

Me: Don't forget to use protection

I smirk at him

Him: Umama is behind you.

He says laughing,I froze on my spot as I had a mini heart attack

Turning slowly to find no one behind me.

Why does he always outsmart me with his comebacks ?

Closing the door in frustration.

I go pour myself a glass of juice before going up to my room

Opening the door and locking behind me,I think I was getting used to doing so

" Ucimba u Clever wena yazi"

I almost drop the glass when I heard that deep voice .

My face was of pure shock, right now.

Reece.

[11/08, 12:52] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert

Had to post this before posting insert 20

I'll try to fix it , be patient.

Sorry for complications

Waking up Saturday morning going to the bathroom to do my morning routine

I go to the kitchen for breakfast

Finding Lungelo with mom, about to eat breakfast

Mom: Good timing

I grin

Me: Where's Oz ?

Lungelo: Asibonakali apha kuwe the only important thing on your mind right now is your brother.

Yes,now who the fuck are you ? Of course I don't say that,being the good girl that I am..

Me: Sorry,Good morning Mom,Lungelo

Mom: Morning baby ,Your brother didn't come back yesterday

Nooding my head as I go to sit down

Taking my plate from her,I thank her before I dig in

Mom: You have any plans today. ?

Swallowing

Me: Romeo and I are going to the beach

Mom: Nice do you need anything, money ?

Lungelo: I don't mind giving her my card

Mom: That'll be so n-

Me: Actually no,thanks.I'll make a some snacks for him and I and he'll also make a few

Mom: And whose dropping and picking you up ?

Lungelo speaks up before I can answer

" I can pick you guys up after you done "

Actually just Fuck.Off

Me: His mom 'IS' (making it clearer) taking us there and will also pick us up later

Mom: Okay all sorted,have fun

She says as she takes the last bite of her toast before going to peck her man's cheek.

I roll my eyes

Mom: Are you spending the day here ?

Lungelo: Yeah,I might spend the whole weekend

here because I'm off work.Only you don't mind ?

Shaking her head no

Mom: I don't guess I'll see you later then,Alona  
come with my bag

She says as she takes her car keys and shouts  
out a bye to him

Taking the bag from the kitchen counter,It  
wasn't even that 'It' for someone else to carry it  
but I know why she asked though.

Watching her get in her car,closing the door and  
rolls down the window as I hand her the bag

Before turning around to leave

Mom: Alona,can I talk to you for a minute?

And that's why.

Mom: Are you okay with Lungelo and I  
relationship ?

No

Me: Yes Mom



Mom : Sure ?

I nod

Mom: You really don't mind him being here ?

I do.

Me: No mom I don't mind.

She pauses for a moment

Mom: Then why do I feel like you don't like him. ?

Well that's because I don't.

I feel uncomfortable being around him

And I find him Creepy.

But I wasn't going to tell her that,I didn't want to be the one to blame if she decide to break up with him because I didn't quite like him..I wasn't going to take her happiness from her.

Shaking those thoughts out of my head

Me: I do mom.

Mom: Then why did you brush him off when he was trying to be nice ?

I shrug

Me: I didn't want to bother him.

I say to her,I watch her as she's looking at me as if she doesn't believe me.

Me: Mom,I really do like him ..it's just that I'm not used to having a step dad.It's all new to me.

Mom: Okay then,call me if you need anything

I nod before making my way inside the house.

Lungelo wasn't in the kitchen

I finish the last of my breakfast before rinsing my plate.

Opening the fridge,I look for something that I

can take with me to the beach

After preparing and taking the stuff into a medium basket,I go to take a quick bath.

Changing to my White swimsuit ,I wear a see through long dress that had a slit on the side .

Tying my hair into a high tight bun ,I apply sunscreen before packing my stuff in my bag and I was good to go.

I looked proper,I said to myself as I looked myself in the mirror before making my way out.

Bumping into Lungelo on the hallway,he looks at me..Head to toe

Clearing his throat before his eyes meet mine

Him: Are you sure your mom wouldn't mind seeing you wearing like that ?

And who are you to ask ?

Me: No,She actually bought it herself.

I say passing him, Taking the basket from the kitchen counter

I make my way to Romeo's mother waiting car.

.....

20+ minutes later

We had found a spot and we were currently placing our stuff well I was the one doing the placing because he was checking out Some guys who were near our spot.

Romeo: Oh look at the dark skin one, damn his abs could turn any straight guy gay

He says as he nudges me to look, but I refuse

Him: Oh I forgot that you see hot guys everyday, nothing new to you

Me: What is that supposed to mean ?

Him: Your brother ?..Reece

Me: Well I'm not checking my brother out

Him: So its Reece you checking out ?

Elbowing his ribs

Me: Stop twisting my words

He chuckles

Him: I don't blame you though for checking him out,he's like really H.O.T

Me: Can you just stop talking about him ?

Him: Why ?,because it gets you hot down there

He winks

Me: Eww .what ?

Him: It tu-

Me: Just shut up

Him: Your cheeks are turning red,'Princess'

Putting my hands quickly to my cheeks,to cover up the so called 'blush'

He laughs his ass off

I sigh

Me: You have a little bit of a drool right now and

that guy you were talking about is looking at you.

He quickly stops laughing his face now horrified,wiping the imaginary drool.

Him: What ?

He says turning to look at their direction.

Then turns to look at me

Him: Very funny

He says glaring at me

Me: I think he's coming towards us

Him: I'm sure he is(rolling his eyes )I mean what a hot guy can possibly w-

Guy: So you think I'm hot ?

Romeo almost froze on the spot ,slowly turning around to look at the Guy

Romeo: I-I um w-

He stutters

The guy chuckles finding the situation funny.

Guy: I'm Lubabalo, and you are ?

Romeo: Me ? I'm uh uh..

Me: Forgive my friend over, he can be very awkward and shy around guys that he finds 'hot' as he likes to call them.

Now Romeo is really glaring at me.

I smirk at him

Me: His name is Romeo.

Guy: Romeo..and you are ?

Me: Alona

Guy: Pretty names, Do you mind if me and my guys over there (pointing at three guys) chill with you ?

Romeo:

Me: Actually we don't, we'd like some company..I mean it's not like we're expecting anyone It's just the two of us

I quickly say before my friend denies the offer.

Guy: Ok Cool,I'll let them know

He says running off to his friends.

Romeo: What was that for

Me: And suddenly he can speak.

I laugh at him as he pouts at me.

.....

About a few minutes later,we were really having fun with the 3 guys who we later found out that they were student's at UCT.

Lubabalo was busy flirting with Romeo and I was chatting with the two guys,Thami and Bonile

Bonile was focused on his phone most of the time though

Thami: So a pretty girl like you is single ?

Me: Yeah,just came out of a breakup



Thami: He must be blind to let someone like you go then

He says biting his lower lip, looking away blushing.

Bonile: Dude ,flirt all you want but I'm getting her number

Thami: Now you wanna cheat on zanele ?

He smirks at his friend.

Bonile: Well you can't blame me

He says scratching the back of his head looking at me.

Then quickly going back to his phone when he sees me looking at him, he was kinda shy

Thami: Oh yeah where were we ? So do you mind if i get your numbers

"Actually she minds because she has a boyfriend"

Turning around,all eyes turn to look at the source of voice.

Reece.

[11/08, 12:53] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] :  
Continuation of that missed Insert

Oh my god what was he doing here ?,how did he even find me ?,was he following me around ?These were just one of my many questions

Thami: Boyfriend ?

Reece: Don't make me repeat myself.Shit face.

He says in his deep voice,making Thami gulp in..fear ?

Thami turns to look at me confused

Thami: I thought you said you don't have a boyfriend ?

Me: I don't

Reece: You don't ?

He asks daring me to say something that'll piss him off and decide to drown me in the water.

Me: Well I um ..m-

Reece: Masambe Alona.

Me: Andifuni

I mumbled

Reece: Awufuni ?

He asks ,giving me a chance to say otherwise

Thami: Look Dude just let her be because s-

Reece: Dude ?

He asks shaking his head in disbelief,the next thing we know Reece's hand is around Thami's neck.We almost didn't see it happen,it was so fast.

Punching him making him bleed immediately,I

think his nose is broken

He was about to punch him again when I quickly got up Standing in front of them

Which was a stupid thing to do because because I almost got hit by Reece's fist

Hayi Noba bendi'zoyo jika esbhedlela.

Looking up at him while he looks down at me

Me: Please don't hurt him any further,lets just go

Its not that I wanted to go with him but I just had to before he caused any further damage.

Me: Please ?

I try,touching his hand with my trembling one

I had to do anything right now for him not

to pull out his gun and decide to shoot us all,he can be psychotic when he wanted to.

He seems to cool off

Him: I'll wait for you at the parking lot

I nod

He kisses my cheek, glaring at thami before he walks away.

Quickly taking a tissue from my bag,I try to clean Thami's nose but he doesn't let me

Him: I'll be fine don't worry just go

I take some of my stuff and put them in my bag.

Romeo: Don't worry about the basket,I'll just drop it off at your house tomorrow

I know by that,it meant he also wanted to talk to me

I nod

Me: Will you be fine ?

Romeo: Yeah,I'll call mom later when I want to go

I nod ,getting up with my bag

Me: Call me when you get home.

He nods

Turning to look at the guys

Me: I'm really sorry guys for what just happened.

Lubabalo: Naaa don't worry. We all had a good time, Maybe we'll hang out sometime ?

I nod not wanting to say something that might give him false hope, cause who knows ? Maybe Reece will threaten to shoot their legs off if he sees me with the..

Getting up, I say an Awkward bye before leaving them.

.....

45+ minutes later

Reece parks outside his car

Getting in to find a couple of guys ,their eyes all on me..checking me out ?

I was now suddenly uncomfortable in what I was wearing

Reece:

He drags me up in his room,

Him: What do you want to do ?,watch a movie and maybe cuddle

I scoff

Me:You took me from my friends for what ?,A movie and a cuddle..yeah right as if I'll agree to that

Him: You call a bunch of horny guys your friends ? All they saw you for was a good fuck at pass over.

Me: I'd rather be with a Bunch of horny guys' than be with you right now.

Him: I'm sure you do

Me: What you did over there wasn't necessary

Him: Andiz' uqhelwa zezi ntwana zakho mna

Me: Yeka ke nawe uziqhelisa ngazo ngoba into oyifuna emva kwam ayikho,going around causing unnecessary fights just for someone who doesn't even want you

Him: If it means I'll have to fight them off you then I will,Princess.Remember I told you there's nothing that is going to stand in my way to get you, nawe lo I'll fight you

If I have to

Rolling my eyes at him,I was so tired of fighting with him

Him: Wa Roll(e) lo mehlo ayojika enqentsu and see if I care.

Him: I'm taking a shower,Want to join me ?

Folding my arms I look away from him

Me: Mxm.

I was actually irritated



With quick reflexes he has my chin in a death grip,forcing me to look up to him

Him: Uthi 'Mxm' kubani Alona ?

Me: Xolo.

He Tsk tsk before letting go of me,I quickly rub my chin because it actually hurt.

I watch him as he walks away from me to his bathroom,taking his off his clothes on the way.

As soon as he's out of sight,I go for my bag that was on top of his bed then open the door quietly and get out.

Making my way down the stairs,my heart was thumping

Passing the guys at the lounge,I was about to open the door to get out when one of them decided to say something

Him: Uphi u Reece ?

I turn to look at the source of voice

Clearing my throat

Me: Upstairs

Him: Did he say you can go ?

Me: Did he say you can talk to me ?

I say smirking,now I know he won't dare to call Reece and tell him that I was trying to escape because I'd also tell that he talked to me

Not that I'd really do it though,I didn't want people getting hurt because of me

But I won't stop him from actually thinking that I was going to do it though because this was my only chance to run away from him.

I hear him mutter " bitch" before he gets up heading towards me one when one of the guys butts in

" AK,Don't "

Turning to look at the guy who I once heard Reece call him his brother saves me from AK.

O he wasn't bad after all.

Not wasting any time,I sprint out of the house  
and into the streets to find a taxi

.....

Arriving home later on,I find no one and I'm glad  
for that.

I go to put my stuff in my room and then  
coming back down to start cooking supper

I was almost done when there was a knock at the  
door,I almost froze thinking it would be  
Reece.Oh well Bendizm'tshisa ngala  
mbiz'enyama if he would try to hurt me.

Going to open anyway ,I find Lungelo standing  
there

Rolling my eyes inwardly

I mumble a greet

Him: Ungase uthule nje Xa ungafuni ubulisa ?

I ignore him, He follows me to the kitchen

Stirring the pot of Beef stew..I could feel him standing right behind me

My body tenses

Him: Your cooking smells great.

He almost whispers in my ear

Clearing my throat,I move away

Me: T-thanks.

Dishing out later on,It was just me and Lungelo sitting in an awkward silence at the sitting room eating.

Till he decides to break it

Him: It's like everything about you is perfect, You smart ,You're young,You can cook..I could go on all day with the compliments

He smirks at me

Me: Are those compliments ?

Him: Yeah u-

Me: They just come out Awkward from you,making me feel uncomfortable.

I say to him before getting up to put my bowl in the sink then going to lock myself in my room.

Changing into my pyjamas before tucking myself in my blankets ,taking my phone and switching it on and messages start flooding in

I already knew who they're from without checking,Reece.

Conforming my guess,I open the first message and yeap

Threat message

Deleting them without reading,I didn't wanna put myself in depression.

As if on cue,my phone starts ringing

Reece's name appearing on the screen,Almost jumping out of my skin.

I let it ring till it stops and I switch it off again.

I'll deal with him when I see him.

[11/08, 12:53] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Read  
Insert 21 as a Reminder.

Counting the last two missed inserts

Insert 23

Standing there near my window was none other than Reece

In a dark clothing making him look more intimidating.

Was he mourning my now to be death ?

Was he here to kill me ?, I knew he was capable of doing it because I have once literally witnessed him doing something like that.

I'm in deep trouble.

I was literally sweating right now.

Turning around quickly to hold the door handle as to get out

His voice and what he says stops me

"I dare you to open that fucken door I swear I'll shoot the back of your head sogqiba ndiphume ngalandlela bendi ngene ngayo and no one will ever know who did it "

He threatened, Making me think twice about my next move

Turning back to face him, I gulp as I look at him then at the gun in his hand

He takes two steps towards me in a blink of an eye he had me by my throat

I got startled by the move that I dropped the almost empty glass on the floor covered with a thick mat ,Lucky that it didn't break.

I try to pry his hand off my neck, he was cutting off my air supply

Me: R-eece

I call out to him in a strangled voice

He glared down at me .

He ignores me as he throws me on top of my bed. Quickly putting my hand on my throat rubbing it because it hurt

I cough out violently as tears start to fall out of my eyes

Him: You ran away from me Alona

He said in his low deep voice,like ebengafun' uthetha

Him: You ran away from..me

He says once again,his voice almost laced with hurt.

I think it this thing was more deeper than I thought it was.

Him: Undishiyile Alona,Like every other person w-



He stops mid sentence feeling like he had given away to much.

What was all this about ?

Getting on top of me,opening my legs so he could be in-between them

Quickly closing my eyes shut,afraid of what might follow

Him: Open your eyes

I keep them closed

Him: Open your eyes Alona !

He whisper yells at me.

Opening my teary eyes to look at him,he had his gun pointed on my temple.

Him: Ufuna undishiya Alona. ? ( You want to leave me)

He asked in the type of way someone in relationship with someone would ask,like if he/ she wanted to break up with the other.

But the thing is we weren't in a relationship,he thought we were

And yes I wanted to leave him But if I said that,only god knows what he would do right now with the gun on my temple

I shook my head,trembling under him

Me: N-No

I stutter out

Him: Say it like you mean it Alona.

Mustering all my strength

Me: N-no(I gulp) I don't want to leave y-you-

He waits for a moment,satisfied with my answer.

Him: Good

He says as he stares at me

Lifting his hand up to my face,I quickly close my eyes cowering away

But instead he wipes the streaks of tears with his thumb.

Him: I don't want you to be afraid of me.

He says whispering in my ear,nibbling my earlobe

My body reacts

Putting his hand on the small of my back lifting me lightly,Our bodies touching

His other hand removing my hair from my face,He leans in for a kiss

His lips touching mine,I don't kiss him back though.

He pulls Away looking at me warningly.

Bringing his lips back to mine,I kiss him trying so hard not to tremble.

Now putting his hand in-between my thighs brushing my sides before his hand touched my part

I almost jump up at the sudden contact his hand made, looking at him pleading silently for him to stop Because I was uncomfortable

He gets off me , and I sigh in relief because he didn't put a fight

Placing his gun next to the table on his side .He lays on his back, placing me on top of him as he wraps his arms around my waist Now my head resting on his firm chest

He kisses my forehead whispering "Good night, Princess."

What was good about it ?

.....

Waking up the following day to find myself sleeping alone, Reece had left.

Getting up to get ready for school

I go to the bathroom, stripping my clothes that smelt strongly of him reminding me of the position he forced me to sleep in last night.

Getting out of the tub 15 minutes later

Wearing my uniform and Fixing everything thing  
I go to the kitchen.

Finding mom,my brother and Lungelo

Rolling my eyes inwardly as I see him.

I murmur a Good morning before sitting down  
next to Oz

Mom: You look like you didn't sleep a blink last  
night.

Me: I-I did,it's just w-we are writing a test today  
and I studied all night and slept in the late.

I lie

Looking at Oz with the corner of my eye,he  
probably knew I was lying

Mom: You gonna nail it,don't worry.

I give her a small.

Oz: Do you want me to drive you to school ?

Because you want to talk to me that's all.

Me: Sure.

I say.

After breakfast,we went to his car and off he drove me to school.

10+ minutes later

We were parked next to the school gate,the whole ride was quiet except for the music that was playing

Mumbling a 'thank you ' before opening the door to get out.He stops me

Him: You might be able to lie to mom sometimes and get away with it,but you can't lie to me.

He started

Him: What happened yesterday night after I left ?

I found your friend in my room waiting for me with a gun.

Of cause I didn't say that.

I shrugged.

Him: Lungelo,has he tried anything on you ?

I shook my head no,seeming relieved he continued

Him: Then what is it ?

Me: Its girl stuff

I blurt out

Me: There's this guy that I'm crushing on and t-

Him: Ok you know I don't wanna hear it,Just get out of my car.I just had to make sure that you were okay Enye nenyeye Ayindi funi.

I chuckle,kissing his cheek and getting out of the car.

Walking in the school gates ready to Start the day.

.....

The day took a drag maybe it was because I wasn't in the mood.

After school,going to the library with Romeo to finish off Research

36+ minutes later

Still in front of a computer

Him: I think I've had enough,Ndidikiwe mna.

Me: We all most finished

Him: You've been saying that the past few minutes Alona,Anyway its not like i due date it's soon

Me: You know its better to get earlier done with it so you'll have some time to your self.

Him: Why are you such a nerd ?,I don't know what Reece's sees in you beside the beuty.



Me: Now every conversation we have you just gotta bring him in it

I say

Him: Why do you sometimes hate the guy ?

Me: Not sometimes, Always

Him: Yeah

He says with a hint that says I don't believe you

Him: But why ?

I shrug

Because of the things he does to me

But I don't say that though

I didn't need Romeo to be in my case when I tell him that Reece's is kinda Abusive.

Me: We started off on the wrong foot

Him: You also hate him because he made you break up with prince charming ?

Yes. Ignoring him and continue to print out the

paper I wanted

Him: It was for the best you know ,Reece also saved you from a heartache (sighs) I don't know why you just can't forget about him already.(Enzo)

Me: It's not easy to forget about someone you shared so much memories with,I don't care what he did but I knew he atleast tried love me,So excuse me for being stuck on him.It might be easy for you to forget about someone you fucked last weekend ,you probably don't even know nor remember his name but it's not easy to forget someone who you spent most of your time with.

I said getting all worked up

Him: So you'd still get back with him ?

Me: YES ! And can you get back with your one night stand ? No because you can't even remember the last one you had.Now don't judge me because you don't even have the slightest

clue on how much I'm hurting.

Without answering me,he gets up and packs his stuff before going out.

Shit,I shouldn't have said that

I think to myself

Also getting up to pack my stuff and check out ,I don't see him though he must have already left.

I had to apologize I think to myself as I head to the taxis.

Getting home later on.

[11/08, 12:53] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 24

Waking up the following day to go to school

I had left the house early without eating breakfast because I wanted to have more time to talk to Romeo

I had tried calling him yesterday but he didn't pick up

I wanted to start the day properly and put what happened between us behind.

I had waited for him until the first bell for starting the first period had rang

He's never late so I guess he wasn't coming, Suddenly I wasn't in the mood.

Going to my class to start the first period.

Break time

Sitting alone at our usual spot I was texting on my phone eating a snack bar on the side.

I was bored to a point where I almost wanted to fake sick just so I could go home to watch my f-

" Hey "

A feminine voice says

Turning to find her standing a few feet away from me, a paper bag in hand

Where do I know her face ?, Oh I think she was

amongst those girls I gave up Reece's number to.

Me: Hi

Her: Can I chill with you ?

Me: Y-eah sure.

I say Awkwardly, Well it was unusual for someone to come just come to me and ask for a chill

Well it wasn't really unusual, I somehow got used to it until Oz left

They always asked to chill with me so that I could give them my brother's number or so they could come visit my house in hopes of him being there

I always refused so they just walked away proving to me how fake they were.

Sitting beside me, she opens up the paper bag

Offering me donuts, I take out some and thank

her

Her: I'm Entle,short for Mbalentle.

Indeed she was.

Caramel skin

Big black eyes hair cut short with a line on the side

Full package,but the was something about her that I couldn't really put my finger too.

Me: I'm A-

Her: Alona

One of the strangest things I always get,someone knowing me without me knowing them

She must have seen the confused face I had on

Her: Your probably the 'It' girl everyone envy so pretty much most people know who you are

Me: S-sure

Her: So where is your best friend ?

Me: Absent and where are your friends ?

Her: Got in a Argument,Asisa thethisani.

Deciding not to pry in her business,I shut my mouth and nod

Her: You not going to ask what it was about ?

Me: No,unless you want to tell me

Her: So you not nosy and all ?,I think were going to be good friends.

I shrug

Her: Can we exchange numbers ?

Me: Sure.

I say giving her my number before taking hers .

After school

I was walking alone to the rank

I had spent most of my time with Entle,We also discovered we had some classes together

She was a pretty cool to be with.

We parted ways a few minutes ago, while I had to get a taxi home She had a monthly transport.

.....

Arriving later on endlini to find Oz typing away on his apple laptop

I greet him

Me: What are you doing that is so important you couldn't pick me up .

I ask as I try peeking at the screen but he quickly shut it close

Him: None of your business

He smirks at me

I shrug whatever

Me: Oz

Him: Just booked a flight



Me: To where ?

Him: None of your business,I'll be gone for a couple of days

Me: Wh-

Him: How was school ?

He asked,changing the subject.

Me: Just cool,though Romeo was absent I made a new friend

I say smiling at him

Him: Another gay ?

Me: Nope,it's a girl.

Him: Is she pretty ?

He asks wiggling his eyebrows at me

Rolling my eyes,I knew if I answered that he'd next ask for her number

Me: I think I'm going for a nap .

I say getting up

I hear him chuckle behind me as I go to my room.

Changing out of my uniform to wear my favourite grey gutter track pants and my white baggy vest,I wasn't going anywhere anyway.

Throwing myself on too,I sigh out loud  
Tired I was.

Waking up later on when I heard my phone's ringtone

Pressing the answer button blindly I lazily put the phone on my ear

Me: Mhh ?

" Princess you Always sleeping,I'd say there's Reece Jnr growing Inside your tummy but we haven't fucked yet so I'm just gonna say you're tired "

I sigh in annoyance

Me: I'm trying so hard not to gag right now,  
Reece Jnr ? I'd probably kill that little devil  
before it eats me alive .

Him: And then see what I'm gonna do to you.

Rolling my eyes

Him: I'm outside.

Me: Ngoku ndithini ?

Him: Sundinyela Alona.

He says before he hangs up.

Getting up to go wash my face,I brush my teeth  
and make my way out

6:32 pm

No one was home beside me.

Approaching him as he was leaning on his car  
that was parked a few houses away.

I stand a couple of feet away from him,folding  
my arms on my chest

I glare at him

Me: What do you want, Reece ?

Him: The way my name rolls off your tongue ,I'm trying so hard not to fuck you senseless right here and now

He says as he snakes his hand on my waist bringing me to stand in between his legs.

Putting my hand on top of his to pull it off

Him: Ungakhe ulinge.

He says in a stern voice

Dropping my hand to my side,I look anywhere but him

Him: I don't know when you going to learn that I can touch you when I want ,how I want to and anywhere and you aren't going to stop me Okay ?

I don't answer him,Putting pressure on my waist

I quickly mutter out a forced " Okay" ,Of course I wasn't okay with it.

Me: Why can't you just be nice ?

Him: I was raised not to show emotion,so being nice is not in my blood but I'm trying so hard for you but you just always got to find a way to piss me off.

I snort

Me: I'm sure you were raised under a harsh environment making you turn out to be this Ass-what you are today.

Him: Sukhamis' uthyale Alona.

He says all jokes aside,seriousness on his voice.

Me: Xolo

I gulp

His hand making contact with my flesh (under my shirt) ,he rubs small circles

Him: Ibinjani Imini yakho ,Alona ?

He tries

Me: Cool

He sighs

Him: I'm not an expert on this type of shit but aren't you supposed to ask how mine was ?

Me: Depends if I want to know or not

He nods,Running his hand through his hair

Him: You know I'm really trying to be normal right now,to make us work ?

Me: Us ? There is no us and the never was,there sooner you get that through your thick skull the better so Suzibhanxa

Him: In other words ndim lo usis' bhanxa ?

He chuckles in disbelief.

Him: Yeka utheth' unothanda kum Alona before ndikuyekise ngose ndikunya'thele.

Finding seriousness in his voice,I shut my mouth.

Him: S-

He was cut off by someone calling out to me "

Alona"

Turning to find Lungelo peeking out of the window of his car, He was alone and I thanked god for that

He looked at Reece then at his hands that were under my shirt. Quickly trying to shrug them out, he holds me tight

Him: Iya endlini, ngoku !

He shouts

Reece: Don't fucken talk to h-

I take the risk of stepping on his foot on purpose just to shut him

Me: It's my stepdad( note:sarcasm), so please take your hands off before you get me in trouble

I whisper at him

He doesn't budge instead he removes them , now holding my butt

I look at him in disbelief.

Him: I don't care.

Lungelo: Alona !

He says, getting angrier

Me: Reece please, let go.

Him: And what do I get

He asks suggestively

Me: What ever but please don't get me in trouble, I'm begging you. I don't want to piss him off so that he ends up telling my mom ..please ?

He drops his hands to his sides

Him: Tell him you coming in a moment he can go

Swallowing the lump in my throat

I turn to look at Lungelo

Me: Can you just give me a minute, I'll follow after you



Looking at me then Glaring behind me.

He drives off in full speed.

Turning to look at Reece

Me: Can I go now that you just proved you always get what you want , that you have the last say ?

He smirks

Him: Yeah.

He pecks my lips before getting in his car

Him: I might come see you tomorrow.

Me: As if I want you too

Him: Deep down you know you do, Stop being in denial Princess. No one can resist me

Winking at me

Him: Now go home,xelele lanja uba iye yathi vu nje ikuxabanise nonozala . Ndizay' khaba ubuMoffie buphume.

He says before also driving off.

.....

Breathing in and out just to calm myself

I open the door to find a pissed off Lungelo  
Pacing up and down the sitting room.

I don't know why he was Overreacting.

Him: I thought you said you weren't dating  
anyone.

So ?

Me: Please don't tell mom ? ,and please don't  
tell her about what you just saw

I beg

He pretends to be pondering on it for a moment

Him: And what do I get ?

He says giving me his mischievous grin.

I look at him confused

[11/08, 12:53] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 25

Lungelo : What do I get ?

Me: What do you mean what do you get ?

Lungelo: I mean if I don't tell your mom,or your brother that you have a boyfriend and tell them what I saw you two doing then what do I get ?

Me: Don't make it sound like we were doing something big,it was j-

Him: It was just a make out sessions in the middle of the street to show the neighbours what type of a girl your mother raised,embarrassing her. His hand was just under your shirt,resting on top of your breasts ..what else ? Oh his hands where feeling on your butt wh-

Okay,that wasn't nice

My mother didn't need to know all this,how would I look her in the eye again.

Me: Why do people want to help then use it against you ?

I looked at his confused face

Me: What do you want ?,wash your clothes for a month ?,maybe clean up af-

He chuckles

Him: Far away from that

He says as he comes towards me,Stopping right in front of me

Now face to chest with him

Towering over me,his lips touching the side of my neck,leaving a kiss before he sniffs me

Him: You smell good

Okay,you probably wondering why I don't just raise my knee and kick his balls

I was just too shocked,This I didn't expect.

Tracing his hand on my collarbone,holding the strip of my vest pulling it halfway down

Stepping away from him, pulling it up

Me: W-what are you d-doing

I ask in a shaky,scared voice.

Putting his hand on the side of my face

Him: Look we both adults here so It must be obvious what I want from you,what I wanted when I first met you, no one will have to know.

Turning around to run to my room,he speaks up

I don't turn around though I stop

Him: Or I could let your mom know

Me: I'll also tell her what you just did to me.

He chuckles

Him: As if she'll believe you.She knows for a fact that you didn't like me so Imagine when I convince her that you are just making up stories so you could get rid off me.

Ignoring him,I go to my room and make sure I lock the door behind

I wasn't safe.

Getting on top of my bed,I curl my self up

Taking my phone close to me just incase.

I try hard to fall asleep and forget what just happened.

.....

Woken up by a loud banging on my bedroom door

I jump up,terrified of who it might be

"ALONA"

My mom shouts at the top of her lungs.

He didn't tell her did He ?

"Vula lo mnyango wena mntana ndini " (Open the door you child)

Well opening that door was the only way to find out,but I was scared.

" I know you not sleeping so open this door,Now!

?

Walking towards The door with my trembling feet.

Turning the key,I was about to open the door but it was suddenly pushed open with force.

Smacking the side of my body that I fall on my back on the floor.

My angry mother is standing there,glaring down at me.

Standing up on my feet,trying to rub my side

Her: Is it true ?

Me: What are you talking about ,mom ?

Her: Sundenza isibhanxa sakho Alona(Don't make me out to be your idiot), Lungelo says he saw you at the street standing with some guy who was hol- I don't wanna say it,Ngamanyala antoni anga uwenzayo Alona ?

Me: It's not like how he made it out to be, mama  
I can explain

Probably that piece of shit inyenze yane spice

Mom: So it is true ?

Before I can say something

I'm met with a slap across the face

Mom: So you also tried to pull some moves on  
him?,You should be ashamed of yourself

Me: Can I atleast tell my s-side of t-the story ?

I say as I hiccuped,wiping the tears with the  
back of my hand

Her: I don't wanna hear anything,I've had  
enough . I didn't raise you to be like this Alona,  
What are you ? An upcoming whore ? I thought  
I was doing a good job in raising you,clearly I  
was wrong.Undiphoxile Alona !

I look at her with my teary eyes

She leaves me there in a pool of my own tears.



Hearing her say that stuff,I could take it from anyone being called a Whore but not her. It hurts more.

I know what I did wasn't okay ,but at least she could have listened to me and hear what I had to say Couse clearly Lungelo had lied to her.

What hurts the most is that he chose to believe him,than me Her own daughter

Getting on top of my bed,I curl up in a fetal position and try to fall asleep with the tears streaming down my face.

.....

Waking up the following day

I felt like shit

My eyes were a little bit swollen,under.

Looking myself on the bedroom mirror,I had about 3 fingers on my cheek

Disadvantages of being light skinned

My body was in pain,probably from the fall  
Sighing in pity.

I wait for the water to be in the right  
temperature before getting in.

I was pretty much done with everything,I was  
now debating whether to go for breakfast or not  
I wasn't sure if I could face my mom after what  
happened yesterday

But I would have to sooner or later and get it  
over done with.

Going to the kitchen to find mom and Lungelo

Oz ebengekho,I really needed him right now  
cause I know if he was things wouldn't have  
turned out the way they were.He would stand by  
me no matter what,he'd never judge me

I croak out a hello

Waiting for a reply from mom instead I heard

Lungelo.

Inwardly I roll my eyes

Placing my bag on top of the kitchen bar, I go to open the cardboard to take out cereal.

I had the box on my hands when I heard mom ask "Wenzani ?"(what are you doing ?)

Turning to look at her confused.

Me: I'm going to make cereal for myself mom

Her: Ingathi ngoyibeka, you just proved to me that ungumfazi omdala ngoku so Yenz' I plan ke yoba mawutye Kamand lendoda unayo inemoto kanokutsho so I'm pretty sure ukhupha imali yothengela wena into yotya it's nothing kuye, uyeke oku kwemal' yam ukutya .( You should put it back , you just proved to me that you're older woman now so you make a plan for you to eat, your man has a fancy/expensive car anyway I'm sure paying for you to eat is nothing to him, leave the food that I have paid for)

She says

Swallowing the lump forming in my throat,I put the box back.

Taking my bag from the counter

Me: Bendicela Imali ye taxi (can I please have taxi fare)

Her: Why don't you call him so he could drive you to school ? .Andinamali Alona (I don't have money Alona).

Nodding in understanding,I go up to my room

Searching for some coins I found a few from my savings box,glad to see a few notes also.

Taking a taxi fare and some for lunch,I make my way out of the house with a heavy heart

That's how I started my day.

[11/08, 12:54] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 26

The past few days felt like a drag

It's like they were slowing down just to mock me of my misery.

Things were pretty bad at home, Oz had gone to take care of some " business " so he didn't know what was going on. Sometimes he'd call and ask how I was I always lied telling him I'm okay even though I wasn't, I didn't want to bother him

I was still living off my savings and the thing was I was running out of them

Things were pretty much the same if they weren't worse

I wasn't allowed to touch any of the grocery because oh well ' indodam' inemali ' as she (mom) liked to say so mandihlukane nento zakhe

I had to walk to school sometimes so I could save some money for lunch so that my friends

well I mean friend wouldn't suspect a thing, I didn't want her pity

Romeo and I were just avoiding each other, though I wanted to talk to him and actually apologise

I think it was best that I stayed away from him because by now he would have known that something was wrong and he would have wanted me to come out with it.

Things between Entle and I were okay.

Reece

Ah, Reece. The reason I'm in this whole mess

I hadn't seen him since the day I was with him and got caught by Lungelo.

I had actually asked well more like begged him to stay away because I was having some family issues, I was glad that he understood me for once.

I wish he'd stay away from me for the rest of

my life

He was nothing but trouble.

I blamed him for everything

If he didn't force his way to my life, Everything  
would be okay right now

Enzo and I would still be dating even if he would  
have cheated I probably wouldn't know and I  
wouldn't have discovered that he never loved  
me.

That sounds pathetic, I know

Things between my best friend and I wouldn't  
be awkward.

I would have never had to lie about my  
Whereabouts to my mom.

I would have never be traumatized because I  
once literally witnessed a murder.

Things between mom and I would still be okay  
because I wouldn't have gotten caught in the

middle of something with Reece because he'd be out of the picture.

Am I making sense ?,I don't think so.

But then again there's Lungelo,he would have come anyway because he's with my mom and he would be still after me no matter what .Just that he thought having something to use against me would give him the advantage of getting in my pants quickly,well he thought wrong.

But he made sure to turn my mother against me

So pretty much my life was meant to be doomed anyway.

Waking up Saturday morning

Going to the bathroom to take an early bath,atleast my hygiene hasn't been taken from me

I decide to tidy my room a bit because I had nothing to do



I would have gone to make breakfast but as I said, I wasn't allowed to touch the grocery.

I was done a few minutes later, going to Oz room and collapsing on his bed smelling the last bits of his cologne

It somehow soothed me

For someone who didn't eat a lot, I just had less energy and I was somehow dizzy

Taking the box that I came with from my room, I open it and take out a snack bar.

My ever day breakfast and supper

Spending most of my lunch time at school, I just bought myself fruit but now I was at home so I guess I'm eating another snack bar for lunch

I was running out of them though, they were gonna last me till Monday then I'll have to figure out something to keep me by because bendi ngena'yongo enye imali to buy another box.

Taking small bites so I could just savor the

moment.

I was playing some games on Oz's playstation in his room while I tried not to think about everything that was bothering me.

A few minutes later I got a call from Oz, quickly picking up

Me: Bhut' wam

I say trying to hide the pain, unhappiness from my voice

Him: Molo ntombam

He says trying to sound like an elder

Me: When are you coming back ?

Him: I don't know yet, there's something that I'm busy with but as soon as I'm done I'll be there. You miss me ?

Me: Nope, Actually I'm glad that you're away. Giving me more time to do whatever I

want without you getting on my way. I sleep with the door open knowing that you're not here to prank me.

I lie

He chuckles

Him: Don't get to comfortable

Me: Oh if you knew, I'm in your room right now. Sprawled out on the bed playing some soccer game on your playstation after I deleted all your previous scores, I say pulling his leg

Him: Alona !

I laugh at his voice that screamed horrified

Him: You know I actually banged some chick on that bed and I might have forgot to change the bedding

I screech out before jumping off the bed

Him: Pretty gross to sleep on top of someone's juices if you ask

He continues to taunt me.

Me: Just shut up,I'm hanging up right now to go to the bathroom to scrub myself clean

Him: Drama queen

Me: Nasty piece of shit

Him: I can smell that cum from you right now.

Me: Pig

I mutter before hanging up as I hear him laugh

I smile to myself,he always managed to put me in a better mood.

Going out of his room still smiling,my smile drops though as I see Lungelo in the corridor

Trying to sidestep step him

He grabs me by my arm before pushing me to the wall,his hands on either side of my head cornering me.

I start to shake,trying to not let it show

I didn't wanna appear as weak because he could use it to his advantage

Him: You know you are getting skinnier by the day

Me: A-all thanks to you

Him: You know things wouldn't have turned out the way they are right now if you had just given me what I wanted

Me: Over my dead body

Him: That could also work you know ? Kill you right now so I could have my way with you,then when I'm done I just dispose your body where no one will find you. I doubt your mom would look for you though I could just say you ran away from home

Me: You're mentally ill and twisted

Him: Its called being the master of plans. You know its still not too late for you to reconsider your decision. Give me what I want and lets just

say I'll financially take care of you since you got no one doing it for you,Not even your precious boyfriend.

Me: That's because he doesn't know what's going on right now,who the cause of all this mess is.Trust me if he did,you wouldn't be here right now.

Well I just had to pretend and go on with it.

He chuckles

Him: Am I supposed to be scared and stay away from you ?,Well I'm not and I won't.Did your mother ever tell you how we met ?

I shrug

Me: It's not like I would have actually cared to listen

Him: Well I'll tell you anyway .I'm a former member of a gang. I got shot so I had to go to the Private hospital to get the bullet out,I just

lied easily and said it was robbery and they believed me . Your mom helped me and blah blah and we ended up being 'friends' if you know what I mean.

He winks

Him: So tell me,why would a former gang member be afraid of some random guy ?

Now that is sorted,where were we ?,oh how about we..

He says leaning down to kiss me,Bringing my knee up high

I kick his balls

Satisfied with the sound he makes

I run out of the house to god knows where.

.....

I found myself sitting alone at the park

But at least I would have some company because Entle was coming

She called me asking if she could visit,I told her  
we could meet at the park

Well I was already here,she didn't mind though.

Feeling someone close my eyes from behind,I  
wait for a moment before I guess

Me: Entle ?

Her: How did you know

She says appearing in front of me

Me: It was just a guess

I look at her as she frowns at me

Smirking in return

She looked great in a pair of white vans,  
boyfriend blue washed jeans except they  
weren't torn and a baggy shirt that ended just  
mid thigh

Her cut always fresh



Me: You look great

Her: But ?

Me: You could be mistaken for a Tomboy

Her: That's because I a- ..I just prefer to wear guy clothes than those girly stuff ,I don't feel comfortable

I nod in understanding.

Her: Masambe sothenga something by that Fast food place,I feel like eating some junk

Me: I-I don't have my m-money with me.You can go though and get whatever for your self ,don't mind me .

Her: Mhh.m iza,I got enough cash on me for the both of us

Me: Really I'm fine you c-

Pulling me by my hand to get up

Her: Andizobe ndicengana nawe,ndifun' utya mna

Me: I wonder okutya ukutya kangaka kuya kwel' phi icala

I say trying to lighten the mood

She pushes my side

Me: And how do you know that place ?

Her: Because I live here. ?

Me: You mean this same street ?

Her: That you could say

Me: Then how come I've never seen you before ?

Her: Maybe you're house girl, I sometimes come this side with my friends and I've never seen you either

Me: House girl ?

I say as I punch her arm side

Her: And I wonder how you managed to almost break that guys nose when I'm not even affected by the puny punch you just threw.

Me: Well you're not a guy so mele ndikusizele

Her: But I sure do work out.

Me: Either way, you're still a girl

Her: I'm n-, okay whatever.

She says dragging me to the container

We ordered and had to wait for a moment while they were making it

Bekungathi Akusafiki ndlela le bendi lambe ngayo, Atleast I'll get something in my stomach and I don't have to worry about tonight.

Being with Entle having fun and just fooling around made me forget a little

But it was late and I had to go back home, to my reality

Walking to the door with trembling feet.

I open the door and get in with a thumping heart, waiting for anything to happen.

Finding Mom with her feet on top of Lungelo as they sat and chatted among themselves

I met their eyes and they continued ignoring me

Him: Maybe we should get Little Lungelo here

He says kissing my mom's stomach.

Piss of shit

He wanted to make sure that he gets me out of the picture

Swallowing the lump in my throat

I greet mom but she pays no attention to me, what did I expect though ?

Passing them to go to my room, I stop midway when I heard her say something

" Hlamba izitya eziya zinyuk' intaba eKitchen

Alona, uzishiye uzibona and ke zikulindle "

(Wash those dishes that are turning into the height of mountain Alona, you left them there and they're still dirty and now you gonna wash

them.)

Well first of all I was running from your pervert  
of a man

And secondly, Why should I do the dishes when  
I'm not even allowed to take the glass so I could  
drink water, let alone ulibeka nolibeka Elam  
inyawo e Kitchen.

But I don't say that though, I just nod and go do  
the dishes.

[11/08, 12:54] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 27

Waking up earlier Sunday morning so I could go  
to church

I had just got out of the bathroom and now I  
was getting dressed

In a plain grey long sleeved figure hugging  
dress that end just above my knees

Putting on my Grey sued platform heels

My hair put up in a neat yet messy bun on top of my head

I finish the look with my strip like chocker neck piece around my neck

I liked to keep my things simple

Taking my empty bag,I put a few stuff before heading out.

.....

The church service took an hour long.

It was great

I prayed alot,ndakhe ndathetha no thixo wam

Getting home a while later to find mom

She told me to cook and I did ngomzimba ongena xhala

I dished up for her and him,counting myself out

I went to serve them their plates and then left to go to my room.

Taking off the heels,they were really killing me.

I had nothing else to do beside making my school work up to date before Ironing my uniform

Putting it in place.

I just stayed for a few minutes before considering to just take a nap.

Until I had to pick up my ringing phone

Him: I'm outside

The goes my nap

Getting up and putting on shoes I make my way out.

Getting to Reece a few seconds later,He was inside his car and he opened the door from inside for me to get in

I got in,slamming the door shut after me

Him: Awusemhle nje for ukwenza le Kak' uyenzyayo.

He says leaning in to kiss my cheek then feeling him breathing down my neck while I just looked outside the window

Him: Ubuyephi umhle kanje ? (Where did you go looking this beautiful ?)

Me: Singa banye sayazi umnyango wecaw' ujonge ngaphi. (Some of us know where the church's door is)

Him: You could have just given me a one word answer uyeke uphendula isigezo

Ignore him

Him: So you went to church, wearing that sexy number ? Ubuzam' uCharm(a) Umfundisi na Princess yam(Where you trying to charm the pastor ?)I'm sure he was distracted the whole services

He Says,His chest rumbling with his deep low laughter

Me: Not everyone is a Pervet like you.



Him: Mxm. Did you enjoy ?

Me: Ya

Him: Sundi zela ngelo nqentsu lakho lingekhoyo  
Alona xa uthetha nam.

He says holding my chin turning me to face him

He studies my face

Him: You not okay.

He says as a matter of fact.

If you knew what I was going through right now  
,Of course I wouldn't be okay.

Closing my eyes to take a deep breath so I  
wouldn't break down

Me: Have I ever been okay in front of you  
before ?,No. Of course when I see you my  
mood turns from okay to not okay .

Him: What's bothering you ?

Me: You.

Him: Alona

He calls out my name ,warningly

Me: J-just going through some family issues

Him: What issues ?

Me: Issues that are non of your concerns

Him: Everything that's happening with you is my concern,it also concerns me.

Me: Ucimb' u Sweet wena.(you think you sweet )

I blurt out

Shaking his head ,He starts the ignition of his car and drivers off.

Him: Do you want me to stop somewhere to get you something ?

He asks while his eyes were focused ahead.

I so badly wanted to say yes and get whatever I could eat but I thought again that I don't need handouts

Though I knew he didn't see it that way,he didn't even know what I was going through right now

Me: No.

Pulling outside his house,He opens the door for me to get out

Getting inside ,I immediately sit down and hold my head to my hands and closing my eyes closed

I was feeling a bit dizzy and a headache was coming on

" Alona ?"

Me: Ndiyeke (Leave me alone )

Him: Yintoni ?

I don't answer him.

The spot beside me deeps as he seats down.

Removing my hands from my face,he turns me to look at him

Him: Are you sick ?

I breath out to release the tension

Me: Just stop pretending like you care when you don't. The only thing that is making me sick right now is you.

Letting go of my chin

His jaw clenches and unclenches, Getting up  
Abruptly

He turns to glare down at me

Him: Yintoni Ingxaki yakho ,Alona ? (What is your problem Alona ?)

Also getting up to stare up at him.

Me: Nguwe. Nguwe Ingxaki yam. If you had just stayed away from me everything would have still been great ,but no . You ( Deeping my finger in his firm chest,I don't know where I got the nerve) You just had to come into my life and ruin everything.

Him: Me ruin your lif-

He doesn't finish as he chuckles in disbelief

Him: Your life was already ruined, Just that you were in denial

Me: Your just a piece of sh-

I don't get to finish though as he fists my hair in his hand, bringing me close to him as he leans down to whisper in my ear

Him: Mamel' apha Mntana ndini. I'm not going to go round and round in circle going back and forth with you. Andi zube ndicengana nawe or ndinyamezel' unyelwa nguwe ndizosuke ndikukhabe unye qha.

Gripping my hair tighter feeling like the roots were about to come out, I wince in pain.

Him: You. are. mine, get that through your head.

Abruptly letting go of me, I fall on the couch holding in my tears as I watch him going up the stairs.

I don't how long I sat there but I ended up falling

asleep.

.....

Waking up later on, covered in a fleece

I sit up straight ,taking in my surroundings

Seeing Reece sitting on the couch opposite me

A glass of brandy in hand ,staring into thin air.

Standing up,I fold the blanket and was about to ask him where I should put it when he spoke before

Him: You've lost weight,Alona.

He said

I felt my body tense,turning around to look at him

Me: So ?, you're done being my father you're now my mother also ?

He chuckles before his jaw twitches

Him: Izapha

He says motioning me over

Only god knows what he'll do to me right now

I don't move

Him: Iza apha Alona.

He says

Swallowing the lump in my throat,I slowly move my trembling feet to him

Quickly grabbing me by my arm because he felt like I was taking too long,he sits me on top of him.

His hand still with the glass,his other hand goes around my neck in a firm grip.He turns me to look at him

Him: Do you know that I'm capable of snapping your neck right now and kill you then make sure that no one ever finds you ?

He says in his low deep voice

Me: R-Reece pl-ease

I tried as my voice came out strangled,I could feel tears come out of my eyes

He lets go of me after a minute

Quickly rubbing my now sore skin,I wipe the few tears that escaped from my eyes

Him: Then tell me what your problem is and don't tell me that I am or I'll really snap it.

He threatens

Thinking how I should put it to him

Me: M-My mom is mad at me uh-m ..apparently Lungelo told her a-about that day I was with you

I think he even put some stuff in an-d now she doesn't even want to talk to me or atleast hear my side of the story.

I leave it at that,I think I've said enough for him to not go into a killing spree

I swear if I had told him the whole story only god knows what he would have done.



Him: That pimp.

putting the glass on the table

Him: Masambe (Lets go)

He says trying to get up ,unjani kanti lo ? I should have known everything sets him off no matter how I put it

According to how I said it he shouldn't be even reacting because I made it sound like it wasn't a big deal

Me: Reece please no,You can't go there .

I beg him

Him: I thought I told you to tell me if that piece of shit was giving you problems

Me: I was but he just..crushed my spirits

Him: How

I didn't wanna tell him

Me: H-he said that h-e is a f-former gang member and he wasn't afraid of some

r-random guy

Him: Random guy ?

He chuckles in disbelief.

Him: I'll show him random.

He says now getting up

Holding him back with his arm,he turns to look down at him.

Me: Reece

Him: Yinto ?, you living with a former member of a gang and only I know how psycho they can be and I'm not letting him get away with insulting me.

Me: Just let it go. My mom already is mad at me , ngoku xa uzovel' uyongena ekhaya to kick his ass what would she think of me ?,You'll just make matters worse. P-Please ?

Him: Promise that you'll tell me if he ever tries something to you ?

He says coming closer to me to wipe the few tears under my eyes.

He's already tried.

Me: I promise

He sighs in frustration, his hand going through his hair

Him: I don't like this

He says as he thinks of something

Him: I'll give you something, just so you could protect yourself when needed

Me: What ?

He takes me by my hand to follow him upstairs

I remove my hand from him though.

Opening some door to what looked like his office

He took out some huge metal box, pressing in some code

It opens automatically

Peeking inside

It was filled with stuff that I wasn't familiar with,stuff that I only see on TV

Weapons.

Stepping away

Him: Nothing to be afraid off, These are just my small toys. If you know what I mean

Looking at me with a smirk he winks.

He was more dangerous than I made him out to be

I watch as he looks through it

Taking out a medium black..gun ?

He hands it out to me to take

I looked at it for a moment before I shook my head No

Me: Andiyi' funi

Him: Khawthathe Alona ,just try it out

Me: No

Him: Okay

He puts it back,rummaging through the box again

He takes out a all black like small spray bottle

I take it from him

Him: Pepper spray

Me: I know

Him: You know how to use then ?

I nod

Him: Uyazelaphi ?

Me: Beside the movies,I once found it from Oz's room and I accidentally sprayed him with it when he scared me from behind

Him: Sure. Have it with you at all times okay ?

I nod

Him: Good you see,we get along just fine when we not fighting

Me: I might also use this spray on you when you bothering me

Him: Ndik'nyathele kemnake

[11/08, 12:54] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 27

Days passed by with me surviving with water and sometimes I'd get a chance to creep up at night to take a bite while they are sleeping

Lungelo hadn't stopped bugging me and it was getting worse and I was starting to get scared

My brother hadn't come home yet so all in all I was all by myself

Everything was just going downhill for me

Waking up Thursday morning to go to school.

I walked all the way to school, I didn't mind by

now

I was just used to it because it was somehow refreshing

Lunch break

Sitting in class alone since Entle had gone out to buy lunch

I told her that she could go without me because I didn't feel like eating. Lie. I'll just stay in class and finish off some work.

That I knew I couldn't do at home (Not an excuse)

I always came up with excuses.

I was still writing out some answers when suddenly my book was shut close

Looking up to see Romeo

I was nervous

Him: Ku qhubeka ntoni ngawe ?(what's going on with you)

Me: W-what do you mean ?

I asked

Him: You're not your usual self, Something is up with and I want to know.

He says as he sits beside me.

Think of something

Me: It's just that I missed you, you haven't been talking to me. You don't want to talk to me and its getting to me that I might have lost you forever for what I said to you. I didn't mean to say those things its just that I was frustrated, please forgive me.

He sighs

Him: I've already forgiven you, Alona. Now don't give me that only, There is something else that's bothering you

Me: There's n-

Him: I know when you lying.



I shook my head

Me: I don't want to talk about it

Him: So there's is something ?

"Alona"

Turning to see Alona

Romeo: Can you please give us a moment ?

She nods

Her: Sure,I'm going to a netball meeting  
anyway.I just came to her you these.

She says handing me Pie and Some cool drink  
on the side

Me: Y-You didn't have to

Her: But I did.Ina.

Taking them from her,hesitantly

I thank her and watch as she leaves the class.

Taking the pie and opening it

The smell makes my stomach growl,taking a

quick hungry bite

My stomach starts to hurt reminding me that I haven't eaten in days so I had to take it easy.

"Alona"

Romeo brings me back

Putting the pie down,looking at it longingly

I focus my attention to Romeo

Me: Things haven't been great at home.

I sigh as I feel my eyes start to water

Me: Mom knows about Reece and I,not from me though. Lungelo told her after he found Us in in a intimate position at the street,I swear it wasn't my intention but you know how forceful he can be . He first first wanted to make a deal , that I I-sleep with him and he'll keep it quite

Swallowing the lump in ny throat,I continue

Me: I refused. Apparently he told Mom ,He even made it worse by lying saying that I tried to

seduce him. She came to my room later that night and she s-

Stopping to catch my breath

Romeo takes my hand to his

Me: She confronted me about it, I tried telling her my side of the story but she refused. I remember her slapping me telling me how disappointed she was in me , that I'm a whore and I should be ashamed of myself

I say as I wipe the tear that had fallen from my eye

Me: After that she never wanted to talk to me, It's like she was disgusted by me or something. S-She refused to let me eat or give me money for school, she said I could always call my man and ask him to get me something.

I used my savings to keep up the few days until I ran out.

Him: Why didn't you tell me sooner ?.

Me: I-I didn't want to bother you.

I continued to tell him the whole story.

.....

I had asked for a pass out after I faked sick so I was on my way home

I didn't think I could continue with the day after I talked to Romeo .

After talking to him,I felt like a weight was removed from my shoulders

Getting home ,I'm glad when I find no one

Going to my room I quickly change out of my uniform before getting on top of the covers and let sleep overtake me.

Woken up later on when I felt someone combing my hair with his / her hand

I slowly open my blurry eyed,rubbing them with the back of my hand to see clearly

I try to jump up but the weight on top of me doesn't let me

He was strong

Lungelo.

Me: W-what are you d-doing ?,get off me

I say in a shaky voice

Him: Not until I get what I want

He says as he puts his knee on my stomach to keep me in place

Trying to kick out of him so I could escape

It was impossible, I was nothing compared to his strength

Lowering his head to forcefully kiss me

I close my mouth shut moving my head side to side

Him: You want to do this the hard way huh

He asks as he holds me by my neck ,cutting off

my air supply

Making it almost impossible for me to  
breath,Opening my mouth so I could quickly  
breath through it

He takes his chance to stick his tongue in  
Exploring my mouth making me want to gag  
I bit him hard making him throw a punch at me.

"You bitch!"

He screams out at me as he notice's blood  
coming out from his lip

Him: I was gonna take It easy but you just  
provoked me

He says tearing the side of my vest exposing  
my bra

Quickly looking under my pillow with my other  
hand trying to find the pepper spray

I had it on my hand but he saw it and quickly  
snatched it from my hand spraying it on my

eyes

Feeling the burn I quickly shut them close I  
couldn't keep them open. My eyes were itching.

He unbuttoned my jeans and I tried kicking him  
wherever but I was failing

Feeling him grip the side of my now bare thigh  
I lost hope.

History is repeating its self and this time it  
might succeed

[11/08, 12:54] [ +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 29

Waking up

All I hear is the beeping of a machine

And low sounds of voices from couple of feet  
away from me

"I gave her some sedatives a couple of hours  
back,she is still recovering.She is mildly  
malnourished and still weak"

I hear someone sigh

" Is there anything else"

The person asks worriedly,Oz.

"She has minor bruises but those should heal soon"

I hear ,what I assumed was the doctor continue to say

I try getting up but realizing how weak I am I quickly fall down again

Squinting my eyes at the light that's blinding as I tried to open my eyes

" She's Awake"

"Alona ?" I hear My brother call out my name worriedly

" Can you open your eyes Miss ?" I shook my head

Oz: And why is that ?

Dr: She's now feeling the After effects from the



pepper spray after not opening her eyes for a while. I'll give her eye drops they'll help.

Opening my eye,I feel a watery liquid

Closing my eyes again, I open them and I'm able to see even if I was seeing blur

Oz came to my side holding me in a warm tight hug

Pushing myself even more to his chest

I didn't realise I was crying all this while

Me: Where is he, did he d-

I swallow the lump in my throat

Dr: I'll give you guys a minute but I'll be back in a moment

Him: Its okay, Everything will be okay. He didn't force himself o-on you,Romeo got in time

Him: But h-he ran away

He says Clenching his jaw.

Me: He'll come back for m-me, Uzoza Oz h-hell  
come to finish w-w

Fisting his shirt burying my face in his chest

He brushes my back soothingly

Him: He won't, My guys and I are after him. He'll  
be dumb to show his face right now because  
we wil-

I don't ponder over the statement.

I felt safe in his arms.

He asks me what went down when he was  
away, and I tell him all about it

Not mentioning Reece's name

I just said it was some guy

Him: I always called you, why didn't you tell me ?  
That mom is doing all t-

Me: My relationship with her is ruined and I  
didn't want the same for you

Him: Already done.

He said brushing his face in frustration

Him: I shouldn't have left, I knew that bastard was trying some moves on you ngoku bendi khona Then I decided to leave. Bendi cinga nton ?, I should have known t-

Me: It's not your fault

Him: But I s-

Me: Oz just please, I'm okay. Atleast h-he didn't really go that far. You're here now and that's all that I need, to have you by my side

I say hugging him even more closer

"Sorry to disturb you but we have to give you your start with the medication"

The doctor says as he came towards us with a tray in hand Placing it beside me

The smell of food made me nauseous right now

I looked away from it

Oz: Alona

I shook my head

Oz: Just a spoon so that you can take your pills

Me: No

Oz: Please

I continued to shook my head

.....

Feeling someone brush my hand

It was a bit dark in the room but I could make  
out someone beside me

And that someone was brushing my hand

Was he here ? ,Lungelo ?

Has he come to finish me off ?

Trying to jump off the bed but the person  
quickly gets up and clamps my mouth shut with  
his hand before I could scream

Feeling the tears fall down my cheeks

" It's me Reece"

I sigh in relief that its him and not Lungelo

I bit his hand from my mouth he removed it  
cussing under his breath

My hands moved fast as I threw a few punches  
on his chest

He held both my hands before pulling me in a  
tight hug as I sobbed on his shirt.

He just brushed my back

Abruptly pulling away from him

Me: You scared me

Him: Xolo Alona

Me: Don't you (hiccup) ever creep up on me  
(hiccup)like that

Him: Ndithe Xolo Alona ufuna ndithini ? (I said  
Sorry Aliba what do you want me to say)

Me: I t-thought it was him,that he came to finish  
what he started.I just had a nightmare about  
him like he h-he was threatening to come for

me

Him: I hate it when you like this

He said almost pulling his hair off ,letting out a deep breath

He was pissed

Him: I swear when I get that fucker I'll cut off his p-

Me: Reece

Him: Why didn't you tell me,Alona ?

Me: And do what ?,help me and then use it against me? No thanks I've learned my lesson.

Him: Alona

Me: No,I'm even afraid to ask or let someone help me because I've got the fear that he or she'll want something in return. Just like when I asked him (Lungelo ) to not tell mom about what he saw he almost agreed but wanted something in return,he wanted me to sleep with

him!. Why do you all take advantage out of someone's misery ?

I asked in a small voice

Him: Don't compare me to him

Me: You're no different from him

Him: His a perveted piece of s-

Me: Just like you are

Him: Alona

He says warningly

Me: Reece

I glare at him as he's doing the same

I hold his gaze telling myself that I'm not backing down but I couldn't

His unusual brown eyes scared the shit out of me sometimes

Him: You didn't eat.

Me: I don't want to

Him: Why ?

Me: Because I don't want to !

Him: Sundi ngxolela Alona.

I shut my mouth taking in deep breath and letting it out trying to calm myself

Me: Andilambanga. (I'm not hungry)

He pokes my stomach as if trying to prove what I just said

I hiss out in pain

Him: Yinto ? (What)

Me: You're hurting me

Quickly getting up making the chair topple over

He removes the blankets from me as he puts my gown up halfway

Untying the bandage

He looks at the damage done

Lungelo had put his knee on my stomach with



pressure when he tried to keep me down

It still hurt and it was a bit red.

He clenches his jaw

Him: I'm gonna kill him

Moving his hand away, I put the bandage back before pulling the hospital gown down and covering myself with the blankets as I turned to look the other side

I hear him sigh once again

Him: Alona

Me: Just go .

Him: Suthetha Nam olohlobo . (Don't talk to me like that)

He could probably hear the annoyance from my voice.

It was silent for a moment before I heard shuffling ,the door locked and then him getting in behind me almost taking all the space

He scoops me up so that I was on top of him, laying down

Me: Wenzan ? (What are you doing)

Him: Ingathi ndenzani ? (What does it look like I'm doing)

Me: What if Oz finds you in this position with me? I can't lose another family member. I don't think I'll be able to take it

Him: I'll leave early in the morning.

Me: Mxm.

Him: Nawe. (you too )

Waking up the following morning

I sigh in relief when I don't see Reece anywhere.

I felt a little bit better than I was before.

Sitting up straight,It hurt but I'll get used to it

" You're Awake"

Looking at Oz as he stood by the door with a bag in hand

I nod

Me: I just woke up ,what is in there

Him: Got you some clothes

Me: Where ?

He doesn't answer for a moment

Him: Home,Mom chose them because I didn't know what you need and don't

I chuckle

Me: Whose Mom ?

Him: Alona

He pleads

Me: No,Whose Mom ?,The last time I checked I didn't have one. The moment she chose to

bring him in, for him to mistreat me in the place I used to call 'home' ,for I felt unwelcomed ,unloved,For she chose to turn a blind eye to what he was trying to do .For she chose him over me her own daughter For she called me a Disgraceful whore because I tried to seduce her man,she is not my mother.

Him: It'll take time for you to forgive her

Me: Until I do,I'd rather leave in the streets than be under her roof. I might not know whom she decides to bring next

Him: You are not going to live in the streets ndikhona

He says as he comes towards me,putting his hand over my shoulder as he sits down beside me hugging me to him

Him: You're more than welcome to come live with me, in my mansion

He brags

Him: You're on my will for when I die you take it  
I keep quiet

Him: Planning my death already ?,I know my  
house is beautiful and all but don't you think its  
too soon for you to remove me out of the  
picture. ?

I chuckle at his silliness

Him: That's what I want to hear

He says wiping the tears under my eyes

Him: I hate to see you sad

I look at him smiling

Him: It makes you more ugly than you actually  
are.

I punch his side as he continues to laugh at me

We hear clearing of throat,turning to see the DR

Him: It's time for your pills

Me: I'm still not eating

Oz: Alona come on, you can't take pills on an empty stomach. We might have let you off yesterday but we can't now

I shook my head

He sighs in defeat

Dr: Miss if you don't eat, I might just sedate you and force feed you through a pipe . Trust me its not pleasant

Looking at My brother for atleast to back up me, he shrugs

Taking the small bowl of oats from his waiting hand

I fill the spoon with it

Bringing it to my mouth, I open my mouth hesitantly and take it

I keep it in my mouth for a minute deciding whether I should swallow or not

Swallowing it, I shut my eyes close as I feel it almost coming back up but it doesn't

Dr: Take it easy, you don't have to eat it all at least 3 spoons will do for now. Take these when you done.

He says placing a box filled with a couple of different pills beside me before he exits

[11/08, 12:54] [ +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 30



Woken up by a nurse that evening

Apparently it was time for me to eat so that I can take my pills

Scrunching my nose up in distaste as I held a bowl of soup, chicken soup to be specific

It didn't look appetising

" You should bow down and thank god for me"

Romeo says as he enters, A brown paper bag in hand

Kissing my cheek , hands me the bag

Opening it I take out some muffins and a fruit salad

Me: You're life saver,I think I should get myself in hospital more.

I say trying to joke to ease the tension

Him: You know I always spoil you.

I nod as I munch on the salad

Him: How are you ?

Me: I'm fine.

Him: Alona.

I sigh

Me: I'm scared, I'm always scared that h-he might come back and this t-time he'll s-

Him: Don't think like that



He says hugging my side

Me: But you know its true that he might come

He doesn't answer me.

Me: W-What happened that day after I blacked out ?

I look at him as he clenches his jaw

Him: I got in just in time, H-he had his pants halfway done

He shook his head at the memory

Him: That bastard,I got him off you and gave him a couple of punches. I was no match for him, damn his strong but I wasn't going to let him get away with assaulting my best friend

I smiled at him

Him: He ran away though,When I saw you blacked out I phoned Reece and we took you to the hospital. He was so mad.

Me: That's him for you

Him: Has your mom come to see you

I shrug

Him: Unentloni eh ?She should be, after what sh  
-

Me: Don't, I don't want to talk about her.

Him: Okay.

Him: Hee yazi u Enzo's been bugging me lately,  
demanding answers on your well being

Me: How d-

Him: English class, Mrs pillay mentioned it and  
that we should all get you a fruit basket and  
blah blah, just to show our support

Me: That's so sweet of her.

Him: Lo ungu Enzo,Akoneli kuz'bethisa ngo  
Reece ne ?

Me: Well Reece's doesn't have to know about  
Enzo and what he does

Him: Always defending him even when he

bullshits you over and over

I glare at him

Me: Last time we talked about him, you know how it ended .

He rolls his eyes.

We sat there while he filled me on what has been happening in these couple if days I was hospitalized, till it was time for him to go.

I just sat on my own staring at the walls

Thinking about everything

" Wow"

Snapping out of my thoughts, turning to see a doctor standing by the door

He wasn't the one that has been checking on me since I was admitted, this one

He was young

Him: Its not everyday that I get to see beautiful patients

Me: Do you also use that line on your previous patient ?

He shook his head

Him: I might consider keeping you here all month long just so I can get to see you everyday

Me: Keep on flirting,if it's part of your job,go ahead

Him: I'm just giving out compliments

He said as he came towards me,

Him: I think you can go home in the next couple of days,The last doctor who had been checking on you had given me a special diet for your to take

I nod

He continues to examine me and when he was done he ended up sitting with me for the next hour because he was already done running his errands

Him: Do I get to leave with your number ?

I chuckle while I shook my head No

Him: I thought I was doing a pretty good job at being a company

I laugh at the face he makes

He tried pouting but failed miserably

Me: Well you are but that doesn't mean you can get my number

Him: Tough cookie to break uh ?,I just wanna be friends

I ponder on it for a moment

Me: Just friends ?

He quickly nods giving me a sheepish grin

Me: Fine

I said calling out my numbers

Him: I've never had to sweat to get a girls number, I always my good looks and my

physic,Status always came in handy,clearly not to you

He said grumpily

I giggled

Him: Your cute though,guess you were worth sweating for

He winks at me before getting up to leave

Him: I'll see you later

[11/08, 15:55] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 31

Forget the bad memories,face the present with faith ,prepare for your future and appreciate those who are always there for you.

Few weeks later

For a couple of days I had to go for a few

checkups and some therapy now and then  
I was done with my treatment and I was surely  
getting better.

I was trying to get my life back but things  
weren't the same

I had to adjust to my new life without my  
mother in it and in a new environment

I had decided to move in with my brother

I haven't and I wouldn't set a foot at the place I  
once called home

I didn't want to talk nor see her and Oz had  
already begged me a few times just to sort it  
out with her (Mom) but I always refused.

It was bad

I had failed first term and I kind of expected it

I really couldn't concentrate and I didn't give my  
school work my all, I was either distracted or

just lost concentration during a lesson.

I promised myself to get back up when schools reopen though cause I really needed the second term marks to be at their best so that I could use them to apply for university the following year.

Lungelo, that son of a bitch was still on the run

Sometimes I feared that he'd come back and hurt me but I always reminded myself that my brother has my back

All in all not forgetting my friends.

There is no stronger bond that exists than a friendship between two besties . Even if you have a big circle of friends there is always going to be that special one. Those are the ones you can trust with anything

Romeo was that one

He was by my side through it all,

Supporting



But all relationships need to be maintained

My friendship with Entle

Though she didn't really know the full story, she tried her best to be there for me

Reece ?,I don't wanna talk about that Ass-

Don't you dare look at me like that.

-School Holiday

I was standing outside reece's house,by the door.

He opens for me,wearing black gutter track pants that hung dangerously low on his hips and a muscle vest

Damn.

Snapping out of it,I look up at him

Me: Undibizel' e ntoni ?

Him: Morning to you too Princess ,What a lovely

way to greet your partner.

Getting inside

I go sit at the couch, letting the cool breeze hit my skin

The sliding door was open showing a beautiful view outside

The inviting pool with dark blue water

Him: You wanna go in ?

He asked as he saw me looking at it

I shook my head

Me: And give you the satisfaction of seeing me half naked ? No thanks.

Him: I'll give you something to wear.

He offers

Me: I don't fancy smelling like you

He chuckles

Him: Suit yourself cause I am going for a swim

He says taking off his vest

Damn ! ,oh well you can't blame me for drooling

I'm pretty sure its what you would have done if you were in my shoes right now

His well defined abs,the V that was visible when y-

Him: You've got drool on the corner of your mouth

Snapping out of it

I snort

Me: You wish

Him: I know I'm hot and all no need to deny it princess. These -

He says pointing his abs

Me: I've seen better

Him: Yeah,If you telling me about your Ex boyfriend nembambo zakhe .Whoa.

He says heading towards the pool

Me: I hope you drown

I mumble

He chuckles before jumping in.

My phone beeps an incoming message,taking it out from my pocket

I read a text from Njabulo (The guy I met when I was hospitalized - 'thee doctor ')

He sometimes texted me when he wasn't busy at the hospital and we'd have a chat.

I texted him back and put my phone beside me after.

I just sat there by myself my eyes roaming around..

I was bored, and the water looked inviting

Him: Still not coming ?

He smirks at me

Only god knows what he was going to do to me  
deep down there

I shook my head

Taking the remote control,I channel hop

Finding something

I sit back in the couch and relax

Peace.

Imagine the shock I had when I felt him lifting  
me up

Before I could scream at him, He jumped into  
the water with me

Quickly pushing myself up, I try to catch my  
breath

Removing my hair from my face and putting it  
back before Swimming to the side, I sit on the  
slab trying to catch my breath

Me: A-Are you trying t-to kill me or what ?

Him: I'd never kill someone so sexy

He says looking below my chest

He could see through the white vest I was wearing

My braless breasts ,my nipples

Folding my arms to my chest

Him: Wow.

Looking down again, he's now looking at my breast that have gone up turning into a cleavage because of my arms under them.

Letting go

I got up,pulling my shorts down while I took my shoes off and threw them at him but he ducked

Going up to his room,I took my clothes off and putting on a robe that I found

Opening the bathroom door,he passes me some shirt and his boxers

while he went out with my wet clothes

Wearing them,well more like them wearing me

The shirt ended just above my knees

Combing my hair in a wet tight bun on my head,  
I went out

Him: Izapha

He motion for me to come to him as he sat at  
the edge of the bed shirtless. God his tattoos  
scare the hell out of me

Swallowing the lump

Walking to him, he pulls me to stand in between  
his legs

Placing his hands on either side of my waist he  
pulls me closer to him

Him: You look so fucking sexy wearing my  
clothes..you know that ?

I didn't say anything

If I had a choice I swear I wouldn't have put  
them on but since mine where wet I had to .

Lifting my shirt up a bit revealing my stomach  
and placing a kiss on it

Pulling away from him to glare, he returns it and  
before he could say something

His phone rings saving me from what was  
coming

He answers it with a nod

He stands up heading towards me, Taking my  
hand he intertwined our fingers together and  
opened the door so we could head downstairs

Trying to pull my hand away from him, he puts  
pressure on it till I almost felt it numb

I wince in pain, he glares at me daring me to try  
Pull it again

I sit down while he goes to open the door

In comes a couple of his friends, Greeting me  
before Reece shoots daggers at them

Threatening them to not even side glance me



Girl: Nam lo andi' noncokola naye ?

(Even I can't talk to her)

Reece: Cimb utheni wena ?

Girl: Its not like I'm lesbian nawe uyandazi  
mowc you've once or twice fu-

Guy: Thenjiswa

She stops her,glaring at the guy before turning  
to look at Reece

Girl: Mxm umncinci noba mncinci akhonto  
ndizoy' ncokola naye phof.( she's young anyway  
what can I possibly chat with her)

Reece: Uphume ,umnyango uyamazi ujonge  
ngaphi (You get out,you know where the door is )

Girl: Nowe bedroom yakho ndawazi.

(I also know which side is your bedroom)

She winks at him

Ok. Awkward

Reece gets up, telling the girl to follow him

She gladly gets up, smirking at me

They don't go upstairs though, to the kitchen

It wasn't a few minutes when we all heard a  
scream coming from there

It seems like I was the only one who was  
startled because just as it came again

One of the guys had opened cooler box they  
came with and started passing around beers

Me being me, Curiosity got the better of me

Going to the kitchen to find Reece fisting the  
Girls hair, leaning down to her length as he  
whispered something to her ear while she held  
her cheek

Commanding her to leave, only then he notices  
I'm there

The girl passes by bumping into my shoulder

Murmuring something like "Enjoy it while it last"

She leaves

Reece comes towards me

Swallowing nervously I take a few steps back  
but he quickly grabs me by my arm

Him: Yintoni ngo Alona ?

I quickly shook my head

Me: A-Ayonto

Looking at me for a moment, he probably knew  
I was lying

He drags me with him to the front

Sitting down,taking a beer and taking a sip

Engaging in a chat like nothing happened.

[11/08, 15:55] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 32

Later that evening

I was sitting beside him on the couch while I  
had my head on his shoulder , It was a forced

move of course

I played some game on my phone while I ate from the packet of chips

Reece's friends were still here , including the Girl who I found her name is Thenjiswa

She was glaring at me now and then but I didn't mind her

" Iyangxola le phone yakho,Alona"

I almost jumped startled when I heard Reece's deep voice

Eshee

Me: X-xolo.

I said as I quit in the middle of the game , switching my phone off.

" So her brother is Okay with you dating her ?"

I heard some guy ask .

If only you knew.

Reece: Wena uyinto Kulento uyibuzayo ?

The Guy raised his hands in surrender as he probably could detect that Reece might pounce on him by any second.

Awkward silence.

I had a feeling they all feared him (Reece).

Reece: Alona.

I turned to look at him, waiting for him to say something

Snaking his hand around my waist while the other held an almost empty glass of whiskey, its smell was way too strong it was hurting my nostrils if I might add

Reece: Can y-(stopping mid sentence)

I had a feeling he was going to ask but decided not to, He was used to giving out Commands

Reece: Go make something for me and my guys to eat .

It was a bit of a asking and a command at the same time

And who was I to deny him ?

I nod before getting up to head to his kitchen

Sighing in Annoyance

Opening the fridge that could swallow me whole,  
It was that huge

I saw alot of food that I was unfamiliar with

Taking out what I'll be needing to cook stew, my favourite

I take out the beef from the deep freezer

I guess I'll figure out where everything is for me to cook.

25 + I was almost done with the stew and I was stirring pap on the side

" It smells great in here"

Closing the pot to turn to look at some guy,One of Reece's friends

Me: Uh T-Thanks.

Opening the fridge,he takes out ice cubes

Him: He's really lucky

Me: Pardon ?

Him: To have you. I mean you're full package,It's almost Impossible to find girls like you these days.

Me: Uh uhm

Oh No he's not, if he wasn't threatening / forcing me to be with him, I would have made sure to stay away from him and he'd never get the chance to be with me.

But I didn't say that though.

Him: I'm Sabelo.

He Introduces himself

Him: I already know who you are. So you like cooking. ?

He tries to make a conversation.

I shrug.

Him: You don't talk much hu ?

"She does,She's got a smart mouth if you ask me but she just doesn't use it much to people she don't really like"

Eshee

Reece: Phuma

He tells the guy, saying no more

He heads towards Reece but before he passes him, Reece punches him in the stomach before he says something to him and the guy goes out.

Him: I like this , you wearing my shirt Busy in our kitchen

He says like what he just did didn't even bother him it was the most normal thing to do



Coming to stand behind me,he wraps his arms around me while resting his head on my collar bone

Me: I'm done cooking

I say pulling out of his hold pretending to go wash my hands the sink before going upstairs.

Finding my now dried clothes,I change into them before taking my bag heading downstairs

Finding the guys with their plates , eating

" Uyaphi ?" Looking at Reece

Me: Ndiya'goduka.

Him: Kutsho ba ?

I look at him confused

Him: You're sleeping over.

He says leaving no room for discussion

Me: Andizu gqityelwa nguwe ba ndithin'

I say, Trying to stand up to him

He pauses for a minute

I think everyone stopped eating by now

Him: Uthini ?

He asks, In a way that said I heard you the first time but I'm giving you a chance to say otherwise.

Mustering all the courage

Me: Undivile ( You heard me)

I say heading towards the door to heard out before I was violently grabbed by my arm, almost twisted

He slams me on the wall by my side

" Reece bruh "

I heard one of his guys

Reece: Stay out of it.

He said, his voice calm.

Holding my arm in a death grip, I'm sure it was

going to bruise.

I try to pry his hand off while I tried to avoid the pain also

Him: Ndithi Awuzu hamba, Alona. Wena uthini ?

Sucking in my breath , I didn't want to cry in front of them

I shook my head

Me: A-Andithethi ( I'm not saying anything)

I tell him what he wants to hear, letting him know he has won once again

Him: Good.

He says letting go of me, taking me down to sit next to him

He took the tray that had a plate on

Spooning some food before he brings it to my mouth, I open my mouth hesitantly and take it

Letting me chew while he turned his attention to his guys and girl .

You know what ?,He was shit.

Him: Ulilela nto Alona ?

I didn't even know that I was crying at this moment, Furiously Wiping them Away with the back of my hand because they decided to betray me now

I Abruptly stand up and head upstairs

Slamming the door shut behind me

I go take a shower maybe it will make me feel better right now

After I was done, I lotion and wore some of his clothes

Getting inside the covers, I take my phone switching it on

I had a few missed calls from Oz

Calling him,It rings for a few minutes before he picks up

Him: Ukhe ubenayo I airtime kanti ?,

Me: Always.

Him: I'm sure nezi zibolekwayo i ' Emergency  
airtime ' zibuzwa kuwe

Me: Suzenza mhle ngam.

He chuckles

Him: Where are you ?

Me: I'm sleeping over at Romeo's

Him: It's a good thing you are getting your old  
self back bendi dikiwe ngula granny ubunguye.

He chuckles

Him: So you two are having girls night, I mean  
guys nig- oh girl/guy night ? It sounds Awkward  
but anyway have fun

I laugh at his silliness, I knew he said the first  
few words on purpose

Me: Sure, And what are you doing right now ?

Him: In the middle of banging some chick, She was about to cum when you called but she just had to wait. Its not important than the phone call I'm having right now

Me: Oz!

I scrunch my nose as he laughs on the side, I quickly hang up

He was always looking for ways to scar me

Putting my phone under the pillow, I close my eyes trying to get myself to sleep not before the door opens

Peeking out to see who it is, Reece.

Rolling my eyes before I cover myself

It just a few seconds before I heard him shuffling behind me, getting under the blankets also he wraps his arms around my waist

His all the time move

Bringing me close to him that I could feel his

hard chest on my back

Him: Princess

I keep quiet

Him: Alona ?

Ignore him.

He lightly pinches me

Me: Ouch marn Yintoni !?

Him: Hayi suthetha elohlobo nam Alona

Him: Ndjonge xa ndithetha nawe futhi

I take a deep breath just so I could stop my self  
from clawing his face off

Turning to lay on my back now facing the  
ceiling than him

Him: Xolo Alona

Me: Okay

Him: Okay nto ?

Me: Whatever you Apologising for

Him: Theni unje Alona

Me: I know you are going to do it again, treat me like trash then you going to apologize

Him: Its not everyday you hear me saying the word, It just sounds Awkward and I'm not going to put myself in an Awkward position again meaning I won't do it again

Me: Actually you can and then decide not to apologize

Him: You know I hate hurting you.

Me: Then why do it ?

Him: Xa uzond qhela kakubi Phamb kwama jita am, sogqiba ndikuyeke bona bazoba sathini, Alona ? Udenza Weak moc ngo. I know I've got a soft spot for you but if you going to piss me off then I'll do whatever I would have done to them to you.

Me: And you think what you doing its okay ? Bullying people into doing things your way and



if they don't you use them as your punching bag

He shrugs

Him: It's the only way to make them not bullshit me.

Me: There's actually a thing called 'talking' it helps alot.

Him: Ithatha ixesha. Why not let my fist do the talking ? It actually does a much better work than mouth, It gets the message fast.

Him: I like it when you talk to me without your cheekiness

Me: Ayisuba ndafuna it's just that you and your way of handling things annoy m

Him: Well you better get used to it

Me: I won't, I'll always speak my mind unlike them who allow you to walk all over them like they're your lap dogs

Him: Be careful, Angaku khabisi ngam lo mlomo wakho

He says kissing the corner of my lips before getting up saying he's going for a shower.

I didn't feel like going to sleep yet, Getting up from the bed

I walk to the balcony e, Watching the lights in the city

They were really beautiful at night

"I hope you not thinking of jumping off that balcony"

I shook my head

Me: I'm thinking of a way of getting you to jump off .

[11/08, 15:55] [ +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 33

Waking up Saturday morning, I almost jumped out of bed when I found my head resting on top

of Reece's bare chest

Imagine opening your blurry eyes and the first thing you see is some scary ink

I've been saying this for a while, his tattoos scare me somehow though someone else might find them unique and cool to me they weren't neither.

Trying to wiggle out of his hold, instead he brings me even more closer to him snuggling his face in my hair

Him: Uyaphi ?

He asks in his morning voice, Damn it sounded se- -Clears throat-, still not opening his eyes

Me: To the toilet, I wanna pee just let go of me !

Him: First gimme a kiss

He says pouting his pink lips

Eshee

Me: It's just seconds till I can't hold it anymore.

Loosening his arms off me

I got up and quickly went to the toilet to do my business

I wasn't surprised to see him enter.

Splashing my face with the water, I took a spare brush and started brushing my teeth

Him: I look like shit

He said staring at his hangover face on the mirror

Me: Yeah.

I said just to tick him off

He glares at me before coming to stand behind me

Placing his hand on either side of my hips

Rolling my eyes

Me: It seems like you can't go for long without touching me.

Him: Its hard to keep my hands to my self when I see your curvaceous body

Me: I don't like it.

Him: Why ? Because it makes your body react in a way you don't want it to, it gives you..what do you girls call it ? Oh butterflies ?

Me: No.It repulses me actually makes me shiver in disgust.

He chuckles

Him: I'm sure it does.

Him: I want to ask you something.

I shrug

Him: If we met in different circumstances, would you have given me a chance if I asked you to date Me ?

Me: No.

He nods.

Him: Why ?

Me: You're not my type

Him: What type am I ?

Me: Bad guy kinda thing

Him: So you prefer fuckboy ? Like your Ex boyfriend, I can be that.

Me: I prefer neither, I wouldn't want someone like you anyway

Him: You wouldn't want Someone with my Looks or personality ?

I pause for a minute, thinking.

Me: Personality

Him: So you like my looks it's my personality you don't like ?

He smirks at me

Him: Tell me the picture you painted in your mind for the ' perfect guy' for you.

Me: He doesn't have to be perfect. As long as we build a relationship where there's love,

trust, respect and loyalty that lies on both sides,  
But I know that's almost impossible in  
nowadays.

Him: Make me a cup of strong black coffee.

He blurts out

Ignoring what I just said to him, he can be a  
mood killer when he wants to.

Me: I'm not your maid

Him: Never said you were I was just asking you  
politely to make it for me

Me: You forgot to say please.

He just stares at me, his patience running out

Me: How sure are you that I won't poison it ?

He looks at me as if trying to figure something  
out.

Him: You won't, now go.

Me: Sure Master

Note: Sarcasm at its best.

Him: I'll be glad when you call me that when we fucking , making sure that I hit it right that you won't walk properly for a couple of days.

I almost stopped on my way out but thought that I shouldn't give him the satisfaction of him seeing my horrified expression right now.

I hear his deep laughter behind me, he knows that he got to me.

Making the cup of coffee how he wanted it, I was tempted to do something to it but I thought no I shouldn't

I was to take it to him, when I saw him coming down the stairs

Jamaican-ish designer shades covering his eyes.

Why can't he just die from this hangover ?

Taking the cup in my hand he was about to kiss my cheek but I smoothly ducked off to wipe the



kitchen bar.

Him: I'm going out I need to take care of something quickly , be back in a couple of hours

Me: Why don't you drop me off home on your way ?

I suggest

Him: Because I don't want to.

He says bluntly

Me: I'll take a taxi then

Him: Never said you can leave.

Me: Reece

Him: Don't start, Alona.

He said as he made his way out with the cup in hand.

.....

I spent the day all alone locked up in this huge house

Reece would call now and then assumingly to check up on me but I never picked up

I was mad at him for leaving me here all by myself when I could have went home to my comfort zone.

Standing up bored to a point where I decided to go up to his room for a nap.

Getting in his closet to look for something that I could wear

I wanted to keep my own clothes clean so I could have something to wear when I went back home

Rummaging through his clothes till the deep end where I found a board wall with this little red button that was almost unnoticeable

I so wanted to Press it so that I could see what is it for

Readying my finger to press, I stop midway

What if its a bomb ?

Oh come on, We not in the movies.

Pressing it,some door opens leading to another room

Getting in,If I don't die from a heart attack right now I don't think there's anything that can get me to have it.

I was starting to think that I'm actually in a movie

A small room, with all sorts of weapons

Maybe not all,oh well what did I know about them ?

From Guns in different sizes and shapes, -. Ok I don't know what everything in here was.

Looking at a glass frame on the wall ahead of me,a bullet with something that looked like blood at the tip Was plastered inside it.

Chart board on the other side of the room wr-

"Boo!"

I almost jumped out of my skin if ithontsi nje lomchamo aliphumanga.

Hearing his deep voice whispering so low into my ear that I almost didn't hear him

Reece.

I think I was sweating, like I could literally feel a drop of sweat falling from my forehead to the side.

My heart was thumping so hard that I thought it might just jump out of my chest.

Frozen on the spot.

Him: Scared ?

He asked his voice so calm

I always hate it when he was like this, calm

You don't know what to expect because he's so unpredictable

Him: Ufuna ntoni apha ?

My words we stuck in my throat.

Him: FUCKEN ANSWER ME !

He yelled out at me, making me jump startled.

Grabbing me by my arm, Abruptly turning me to look up at him

I'm lucky that ingalo yam ayophukanga.

Him: Alona !

I just blinked once and tears streamed down my cheeks .

Slamming me at the nearest wall,I could feel the pain

Me: I-I swear I d-didn't mean to e-end up here, I w-was I looking for s-something to wear but then I saw the button and I -I (gulp) was curious.

Him: Curiosity killed the cat

Swallowing the lump in my throat

Me: I'm not a c-cat and you aren't going to kill me .

I blurt out

Me: The cat was dumb

I continue to rumble.

Him: And so are you.

He says before he threw me, hitting the corner of a metal table in the middle of the room with my waist. I scream out in pain before more tears cloud my vision

Me: I didn't m-mean to end up here, please don't  
I beg

Him: Shut up

He says

Me: Why (hiccup)are you keeping these anyway ?

Him: What do you expect from a Gang leader's house ? Barbie dolls ?

He was a gang leader ?

He was in a gang.

Me: You're a a g- g

Picking me up by my throat, I had my hand to my side

It still hurt and I couldn't stand properly at the moment.

Him: Come on, say it with me gang-leader.

He said si slow like he was teaching a pre schooler some words

Him: I thought you have already figured it out.

Me: Do you think I would have snooped around ? I would have asked you upfront about it

I say trying to pry his hands from my hair but it was impossible because I had to put mine back to my waist as another pain shoots through

Him: Yintoni ?

Me: Uggibile undibetha sogqiba uyandi buza ba yintoni ?, I'm a girl not one of your guys so when you decide to manhandle me of course I'll bruise easily

He looked down at me, did I see worry cross his face ? Probably not

Him: Kchange ndikubethe Alona ( I didn't beat you Alona)

Me: Undenzeni ? ( what did you do)

He picks me up bridal,trying to wriggle out of his hold instead I hurt myself more.

He puts me on top of his bed

Standing there running his hand through his hair.

He goes to the bathroom

Closing my eyes shut to endure the pain

Him: Khulula (Undress)

Looking at him as he held a tube like thing

I'm assuming he wants to rub my side

Me: I can do it myself

I said as I tried to take it from him.

He refused though



Him: Alona.

Me: Andifuni.

Him: Just take them off

I shook my head, No

Looking at me for a moment

He put the tube beside me before walking out.

Squeezing the cream in my hand, I gently start rubbing my side.

.....

Laying in a fetal position on the bed

I just got off the phone with my brother

Lying to him once again.

Reece refused to take me home, saying he'll drive me the following day.

I didn't have the strength to fight him, He just made me tired without even trying.

The door to the bedroom opens

Wait for it.

He sits behind me, hearing him sigh

Him: Xolo Alona

I chuckle

Me: It sounds funny coming from your mouth, knowing what you are .A Gang leader , do you also forgive them when you about to take their lives and they beg you not to ?,when asking for forgiveness for whatever they did ?

Him: Ayidibani, these are two different scenarios. Look I'm just apologizing for I've done you wrong , le uyithethayo andiyazi ingena phi.

Me: I forgive you.

Him: You don't mean it Alona

Me: Of course I don't !, It's just that I fear what you are going to do to me if I don't.

I say turning to look at him.

Him: I don't want you to fear me.

I keep silent for a minute

Me: If I thought you were an Evil, Cold hearted Assh- before ..Imagine what I think of you now that I know who you are.

Turning back to my position,I cover myself with a blankets trying to get myself to sleep

Him: Awuzutya kengoku ?

Trust him to ignore and act like a pure asshole in a serious matter .

[11/08, 15:55] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 34

Days passed by.

I spent some of my time with Reece, Not that I wanted to

Do you think I'm gonna say that him and I were getting along ?,Nope

All we did was fight, I always went above him. Challenged him but he'd always win and get his way

I think besendi bhitye nases' qwini kuxabana naye.

Another Sunday afternoon and Reece had gone out to handle ' business ' I don't know which one because beside being a gang leader he also worked at some company

I have once seen him wearing a suit

He looked g- ..He doesn't deserve compliments from me.

I had asked him where he was going, well I was always curious

He told me that he was going to some meeting and before I could ask anything thing he told me he worked at the company because he didn't

want people to get suspicious on how he could afford everything when he didn't work , so he's working just to cover

He doesn't go often though, I guess he was his own boss

I was currently laying down on the mat at the lounge

Watching some tv show when I heard a knock at the door.

I knew it was supposedly Reece's brother, He had informed me that he was coming in the day to take 'something'

Going to open the door

I let him in

Him: Hey

To me ?,Well I wasn't expecting him to greet me.

Me: I'm the bitch, Remember ?

Him: Yeah how can I forget our new piece of ass ?, Reece is going to pass you to me and the rest of the crew (gang) when he's done with you

He chuckles.

Wow

Turning to leave he grabs me by my hand to stop me

Him: Hey! Come back It was just a joke.

Me: Its not funny then

I say going to sit down

Him: You know we didn't start on good terms and I'm sorry for that, you probably think I'm a jerk

Me: Like your brother

I mumble

Him: I know, and I'm sorry

He said sincerely

Me: Are you also in his gang ?

I asked confused at the politeness, especially when he is Reece's brother

Him: I am

Me: Aren't you supposed to be heartless like your brother

He arched his thick brow up and shook his head as he began to laugh

Him: I am but not to cute innocent people like you.

I just looked at him

He cleared his throat

Him: Am not really like him

Me: Sure..so you know what he's doing to me right 'forcing' me to be with him ?, and you do agree with it ?

He shrugs

Him: No

Me: Okay You're his brother maybe you can talk to him ?

Him: And No, once he has his mind to something ,He'll kill anyone to keep it especially In this case

Me: What do you mean ?

Him: He's never done this to any other girl, you're the only one he's ever showed real affection to

Me: Is that supposed to make me feel special ?

He shrugs

Him: You're the first female that he would kill for

Me: I must be lucky then

Note: Sarcasm Alert

Him: He isn't that bad you know. ?

Me: Are we still talking about the same Reece ?

Him: I'm serious Alona



Me: I don't want to know him, All he has been doing is making my life a living hell. He treats me like his property and he has no respect for me ! All he does is threaten me and hurts me when I go against him. Tell me what part of Him isn't bad ?

He pauses for a minutes

Him: He's had a tough upbringing, half the things he has been through...

He pauses feeling like he has given away too much

Him: He doesn't know how to show love

Me: So he shows it by mistreating me ?

Him: Yes.

Me: Niphambene noba bini moc

Him: Look all I'm trying to say is that he loves you but doesn't know how to express it, he's trying though. He would do anything and everything to protect the ones he loves so they

don't hurt anyone ever again..

He says as he trails off in deep thoughts

Him: He may not show that he likes you the way you are used too but trust me, you are the first female that has ever gotten his attention the way you have .He would do anything and everything for you

Me: Except letting me go

He nods

Him: Just bare with him, Don't give him reason to mistreat you . If he feels that he can trust you to not leave him then he may go easy on you. You already see how possessive he is towards you.He already warned all of us to stay away from you and he'll kill us if we defy him.

Sighing in frustration

Me: I don't know what to do

Him: Just choose your battles with him

He says as he gets up to go upstairs

I take my time to process all he has said

Though Enzo was always the perfect guy, Or so I thought. Treated me like I should be treated, I knew I lost a part of me to him. Now with Reece I know I will lose more of my self and I don't want that but maybe I will gain something that I have been lacking..and that is strength and a voice to stand up for myself

Not to him of course, Even if I tried I know he'll always have it last but I wasn't going to ever let him have it easy.

Maybe he wasn't that bad after all, Maybe I should learn to at least tolerate him so that I won't get hurt

Am I making sense right now ?

We'll just see how it goes.

.....

Still at Reece's house.

I was in the middle of cooking early supper  
Spaghetti and meatballs, One of the few things I  
was familiar with from his grocery.

He hadn't come ba-

" Alona "

I heard him call out

I guess he was here then

Just be calm, don't get him worked up and we'll  
see how it goes

Me: I'm here.

I hear his footsteps approach

Putting his laptop bag on the counter before  
standing behind me,wrapping his arms around  
my waist bringing me into his warm chest  
before snuggling his head on the crook of my  
neck

Him: I missed you.

He mumbles

Him: Did Zane come ?

He was referring to his brother

I nod

Him: Did he try something ?

I shook my head

Him: Awukwaz uvul' umlomo Alona ?

He asked getting irritated

You see ?,No matter what I try he'll somehow get pissed

Me: He came, khang ahlale he just went upstairs for whatever then wahamba

Him: You were hoping that he stays ?

Me: Hayi.

He goes to the cabinet, taking out a bottle of

whiskey that was halfway empty. A square shaped glass before coming to sit down at the bar chair

Him: Yinto Alona ? (What is it)

Looking at the glass now filled with whiskey

Me: Awuzutya qala ?( Aren't you going to eat first)

Him: Ungu Mama wam ngo Alona ? (You're my mother now ?)

I shook my head

Me: Bendi buza nje

Him: Don't !

I nod

Dishing out for the both of us, I hand him his plate before taking mine and pouring myself juice.

We ate in silence and I was glad for that.

I rinsed the dishes when we were done and then

I went to watch tv on my own while he went up stairs for whatever.

[11/08, 15:55] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 34

Continues

More days rolled by.

After I had talked to Zane(Reece's brother) that day

I had pondered over his words.

I eased up on Reece,I tried to understand where he came from .

And you know what,I don't know how it came to be

But slowly and surely all this while I was falling for him

I was Falling for the Gang-Leader.

Actually I had already fallen for him.

I stopped feigning denial

It was hard for me to admit,But I couldn't hide it anymore

I've told him,he knows

And I was willing to try something with him only if he promised to respect me,he said he'll try. He was willing to try for me.

Currently at Reece's house

I had cooked and we just finished eating

I was in the middle of a conversation with Reece.I don't know how it came up but I felt like I didn't really know him and I wanted him to tell me about his family or at least whatever,he seems to know all about me and I know nothing about him beside him being a Gang-Leader

Me: Can you at least try to open up to me

Him: Uqale nin uba yi therapist ngo Alona ?



(When did you Start being a therapist ?)

I sigh

Me: It's not about me being a therapist I-I just want you to talk t- you know what ? Just forget it

I said as I got up to go upstairs

I knew he was going to be hard and I just gave up trying without even really trying

I got to his room

Tucking myself under the covers

It wasn't a couple of minutes before I heard the door open, peeking out

Seeing Reece with a glass of whiskey in hand

He came to sit behind me after I heard him place the glass on the table

"My childhood had been no picnic,I'd watched my Parents fight with each other everyday"

I turn to look at him, giving him my attention

Me: About w-

Him: Will you shut up and fucken listen to me or should I shut up and let it be. ?

He snaps at me

I pouse

Me:Xolo

He sighs

Him: No I'm sorry

He says running his hand through his hair in frustration

Getting under the covers himself , he puts my head on top of his chest

Him: I saw how miserable they had been together.

"Don't ever let anyone see you weak,they will use it against you .Show no emotion nor fear,that will be your strength" My dad used to

tell me that growing up ,That's what he was taught growing up and what he instilled in my brother also but I was the one who literally took it to heart,I was my father's son. I loved him regardless of whatever he did to my mother and I.

I'm so much like him that is the reason why the first in command title for the gang was handed to me when he was convicted for several charges including the one that I was supposed to be jailed for but he took the blame for me"

He pauses for a moment as he takes a swig from his glass

Him: I came home one day to find my mother being gun pointed by my father, they had been in the middle of one of their many fights, I had tried to reason with him to let go of the gun , stubborn he is. I Jumped to him, trying to take it We battled till the gun went off and the next thing we know she is laying there in her own

pool of blood, the gun in my hand. I don't know what really happened but all I knew at that moment is that I killed her, I didn't mean to I thought that I was trying to save her from him.

I just sat there next to her lifeless body, Apparently when the gun went off, the neighbors had heard and before my father could force me to help him clean up and hide her body the sirens were heard. He took the blame for what I did, for killing my own mother

Me: Y-You didn't m-mean to

I said as I stuttered

Him:I was always the one by my dad's side , at an early age I was the one to go with him to meetings, jobs and deals. I watched him, learned from him and even idolized the man. Too blind to see what he was doing was absurd,He taught me how to be respected and feared just how everyone did with him.

My father sort of hated us, but had a sort of soft

spot for me

He always used to say kids were a lot of work. They spent your money and dirtied your house and never appreciated the struggle to put food on the table or clothes on their backs. They were ungrateful little assholes just like women.

So I built these walls shielding me from being able to love instead just fuck and pass well until I met you.

I don't know what was it but I just became drawn to you, I know I probably sound like a fucken' pussy right now.

He said laughing in disbelief

Him: If only he could see how I am towards you, how I'm trying so hard to treat you better. Something he never did to my mother.

He says, drinking the last swig from the glass before turning to look at me

Him: Are you disgusted by me now that you

know I killed my own mother

Me: You didn't m-

Him: Stop saying that!

He Yells at me

Him: Y-you want to leave me ?

He asked, detecting vulnerability from his voice

I shook my head,No

Him: Are you afraid of me ?

Me: N-No.

Him: You are lying Alona, and you know how much I hate it

Me: Maybe I am, just a little bit but I know you would n-never hurt me to the extreme

Him: Just go to sleep,Alona.

Me: Y-You would never, right ?

Him: Just.Sleep.

Me: Reece.

Him: I don't know!,okay ? I don't fucken' know how much more I can go till I decide to snap your neck

Snuggling close to his side, he was warm

Me: You won't

I say confidently at him.

Before closing my eyes shut and let sleep overtake me.

.....

Waking up the following day ,I had went to start Making breakfast for Reece and I.

Seeing him lazily drag his feet down the steps

He pecks my lips as he sits down,handing him his plate before taking my own and sitting beside him

Me: About yesterd-

Him: I don't want to talk about it Alona.

He cuts me off

Deciding not to push it,I focus on my plate

Me: Can you drive me home after this ?

Him: No

Me: Please ?,I really need to study for an upcoming test Monday

Him: And I want to spend some time with you

Me: Akhonto siyenzayo when we together than bickering so I'm not looking forward to spending the day with you

He shrugs

Him: I don't care

I sigh in defeat

I get up to rinse the dishes but he stops me

Him: You work yourself too much, leave them. You're not here for that

Me: What am I here for then ?

I ask arching my eyebrow up



He pulls me to stand in between his legs,  
bending so he could kiss me

Picking me up to the couch in the lounge

He lays me down, getting in between my  
legs..His arms rested on either side of my head  
supporting his weight

Biting my lower lip,he pulls away

Him: Still want to go home ?

He smirks at me

Pulling him by his shirt, I take the lead as I kiss  
him but it wasn't for long before he reverses it

He hated being dominated.

I pull away and look at his half open-closed  
brown eyes

Damn,he looked cute

Never thought I'd be the one to admit, but oh  
well

Unsupporting himself , he puts all his weight on

me.

Kicking under him so he could get off, he was heavy

He chuckles

Me: Y-you're killing me, get off

He shook his head No

Me: I c-can't breath

Him: You're overreacting

He says getting off and sitting beside me

Me: Way to go to ruin a moment

Him: So you liked it huh ?

He says giving me his usual smirk

Making me shy away

He cooed at me pinching my cheeks, I swat his hand away

Him: Maybe we can take it upstairs

I look at him wiggling his eyebrows

Me: what ?

He laughs

Him: I like your innocence a-

He was cut short by his ringing phone,taking it out from his pocket

"Ya ?" he answered in a bored voice

Him: ..mhh..got the package ? Okay I'll be there in a few minutes.

He says before he hung up and turns to look at me

His pissed off expression

Him: I need to take care of something,I'll be out all day so I think I'll drive you home .

Mxm. Folding my arms to my chest,I look outside the glass door

Him: Yintoni ngo Alona ?

Me: You said you wanted to spend some time with me.

Him: And now andisa thethi lonto, something just came up

Me: So it's more important than being with me ?

Him: Alona khawuyeke maarn

Me: Okay

I say getting up and going upstairs to quickly freshen up

Taking my stuff, I check if everything was inside before following him out to his car and he drove me home.

[11/08, 15:55] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 35

Oz had picked me up Friday after school because we were planning on going for grocery shopping.

We had went to Woolworths because it was the nearest shop when you get at the entrance of the mall

One of the reasons we shopped here was because Oz was 'tired'

But oh well, I think we all knew the real reason. He didn't want to bump into one of his many girls.

Passing the goodies Isle

We both turn to look at each other, bursting out in laughter

Him: I'm now remembering the day we were sent to go grocery shopping and we came back with Only sweets/snacks

I chuckle

Me: Seeing the horrified look on her(Mom) face later on ,Waking us up from our sleep and made us clean the house at 2am

We continued to laugh

Him: You miss her hu ?

I paused for a moment

Nodding my head,it pains me to think all about the happy moments we had together and now I want nothing to do with her

Him: You should really talk to her though Alona, I know its not in you to hold grudges

I nod once again

Him: So..you'll talk to her

Me: Y-yeah

Him: I'll call her tomorrow m-

Me: Don't push it.

He raised his hands in surrender

Changing the topic

Me: I'm c-can I have my friend sleep over tomorrow ?

Him: Romeo,He's always welcome to come around no need to ask. Qha he should stop always trying to check me out, Makayek' isincwaso ngakum.

He said putting our favourite cereal in the basket

I burst out laughing at his serious face and what he just said

Catching my breath later on

Me: I'll tell him sometime but I'm not talking about him right now. u Entle. Romeo will be away for the weekend

Him: Entle ?

He asked abit confused

Me: My new friend ?,rings any bells ?

Him: Oh that fine assed chick ?

I glare at him

Him: She can come over, I don't mind as long as I'm getting to f-

Me: She's lesbian

Lie.

Him: Once she sees the size of my dick I swear she'll turn straight

He says, earning us a few looks from people near us.

I've always hated his ' I don't care attitude'

Elbowing his stomach he chuckles

Him: But I'll be having a few friends over

I shrug

Me: Sure, as long as they stay out of our way

.....

Saturday evening

Opening the door to let Entle in, I hug her and moving from the door to let her in

Her: Wow,you're leaving the life hu ?

I brush an imaginary dust from both my shoulders

Smirking at her



Her: Uya phapha

She says shoving my side as she passes me to go make herself comfortable on the couch

I'll take your backpack upstairs then we can make a few snacks and then we can decide what to do

Returning a few minutes later

Me: We can watch a movie or play a few games in the game room, my brother has these cool gadgets

Her: Anything is fine with me, as long as I'm with you

Me: Maybe a movie then, I'm not good with playing games anyway .

We made a few snacks before settling in the couch and watching whatever.

We had the lounge to ourselves until my brother

arrived with his friends, including Reece

Well I wasn't going to leave yet until the movie is finished

Oz: Alona ?

Me: Mhh ?

Turning to look at him, he wiggles his eyebrows before motioning to Entle with his eyes

I shook my head

Me: Entle, This is my brother . I'm not surprised if you know him, he's well know for being a womanizer so- ..

I watch Oz as he glares at me

Hearing a couple of his friends laughing

Me: Maybe we should go to my room

I say to Entle

Her: Sure.

Going up to my room,we get comfortable on the

bed

Her: So, your brother hu ?

Me: Don't tell me you want to hook up with him.

Quickly shaking her head no

Her: No not at all,just amazed by his attitude

I sigh in relief

Me: I'm glad,he always managed to ruin my friendship with girls. Always messing around with them then dumping them after then things get complicated

I sigh

Her: Mh. So that Reece guy was amongst them eh ?

I think I might be blushing now.

Me: Yeah

She nods

Her: Is h-

Before she could say something, she was cut off by someone opening the door

As if on cue, Reece gets in

A glass in hand, I guess you already know what it was

He comes towards me, kissing me on the lips

I pull away

Me: Mh.m

Him: Yinto ?

I stared at him for him to catch on, I had company duh.

Him: So wh-

I knew he was about to start an argument, quickly getting up to go get another bag of chips in the kitchen. Trying to avoid it

I snatched them and went up to my room again

To find, Entle lip locking with Reece

To say I was shocked was just an understatement

Clearing my throat as I felt a lump going up my throat.

Only then Reece pulls away,glaring at Entle

Before he could say something, I threw the glass

Aiming at him but he quickly ducked, making it hit the other side

Shattering, spilling out the contents

I turn to run to my brothers room locking the door behind.

.....

Waking up the following day next to Oz in his room, I slept with him in his bed last night because I refused to go to my room

Oz had drove Entle home and Reece

He had been calling me all night long,sending

me a couple of messages but I didn't answer to  
neither

I was beyond Mad at him, to think that I trusted  
him

I felt betrayed

Just when I thought we were making progress  
and I was warming up to him he decided to do  
what he did

Giving me reason to hate him once again

If you have ever found your partner in the  
middle of a make out session with your  
friend, you'll know how I feel right now.

Switching my phone off just so I wouldn't deal  
with neither of them.

I got up and went to wash my face in Oz's  
bathroom before going downstairs to eat  
breakfast

Making cereal, I sit down and stare at it

Well I didn't feel like eating, I had no appetite for it

Putting it away, I got up and went to start cleaning up after My brother and his friends mess just so I could get my mind off things

45+ minutes later, I was tired

But that didn't stop me from going to my room to clean up

Changing the bedding and all

I ended up taking a nap later when I was done.

Waking up later in the day so that I could cook Sunday meal,Oz beat me to it

Me: You cooking , Are you up to something ?,I just hope you didn't put in laxatives in there eh ?

He smirks at me

Me: Oz !

Him: What ? Why would I ?,I wouldn't sweat my ass off all day long just to put in laxatives in

here

I stare at him, but before I could say something

He told me to go open the door

Getting up lazily, opening the door to find..Mom.

I didn't expect her

Oz planned all of this eh ?,he must be cooking because he knew she was coming and he didn't tell me.

We stood there staring at each other for what felt like decades

Moving to the side so that she could get in

She sat on the couch, turning to look me

Her: I'm here to talk to you..c-can I talk to you?,If you not busy that is. We c-

She stops midway, she was nervous and right now she couldn't really look at me

Sitting on the couch opposite hers



Her: Unjani ?

She asks nervously

Me: Okay.

I say

Me: Wena unjani ?

She waits for a minute

Her: Not Okay, I miss you guys. I miss abantwana bam.

I snort

Well I didn't mean to but

Me: Abantwana bakho ?,Iphi indodakho ngoku ?

Her: Ndisengu Nyoko Alona,Ungakhe ulinge uthethe nam ngathi uthetha ne tshomi yakho.  
(I'm still your mother Alona,don't you dare talk to me like you to talking to one of your friends)

I kept quiet

Her: I know you're angry at m-

Me: Angry ?, Angry is an understatement. I'm beyond angry, I hate you. How could you ? How could you choose to believe a man Other than your own daughter ? Your own flesh and blood ? Where were you when I needed your protection ?,reassurance that you will keep me safe eh ? Rather you call me all sorts of words,a whore ? What kind of a mother calls her own child a whore ? I can take it from anyone else but not you. Do you know how it cut me deep ? You made me feel like I'm worthless, like I was some kind of a mistake in your life and now that there was a man in your life you wanted me out of the picture, like I was blocking your path or something. He sexually assaulted me right under your nose but you didn't believe me when I told you, why ? How could you even think that I'd be after him, my mom's man, Do you know how pathetic that sound(ed) coming from you ? I asked, not expecting an answer

Watching her wipe the tears from her eyes

Her: I know, what I did to you as your parent is unforgivable .But you don't know how much I regret

Me: Then why ?

Her: I w-was just desperate. (sighs) Both your fathers left me, You don't know how hurt I was .Left me a single parent raising you all by myself, You were always my first priority Which it should have been that way. But as a woman I craved a man's affection and when I got that f- from Lungelo, I told myself that I'm not letting go. I didn't want him to leave me like your fathers did ,I was scared that he'd leave me, That doesn't justify my actions though. I'm really sorry mntanam, can you please find it in your heart to forgive me

She asked, opening her arms for me to run into them

How inviting they looked, I refused to hug him though

Dropping them to her sides,disappointed

Her: I would never trade you for anything, you and your brother are all I need in my life,as long as I am happy with you then I don't need anything or anyone else,I understand your hate

She said the word in a pained face

Her: Towards me,You have every right to . But please don't hate me too much that you don't want anything with me, I don't know what I'll ever do without you or your brother. Sendi philela nina ngokua

She said getting up,patting my back before heading towards the door to leave.

Me: M-Mom

I stopped her,as her words registered in my mind. How they warmed me up almost forgetting that I was mad at her

Getting up and running to her arms,that quickly

engulfed me as if they have been waiting.

I Sobbed to her chest,smelling her perfume

I missed her smell

I missed my mother.

Me: I-I forgive you

That's all she needed to hear for her to hold me even more tighter than before.

Of course it wasn't going to be easy to remand our relationship,but we'll get there.

[11/08, 15:55] [ +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 36

Going to school monday morning after I had dragged myself from bed.

I didn't feel like going,I was just irritated by the fact that I'd have to face my so called back stabber of a friend.

I had gone to the first,second period then it was break

Sitting inside my class at break time,I was with Romeo

Him:uphi u Entle ?

I shrug

Me: I don't know and I don't care

Him: You guys had a fight or something ?

Me: I found her lip locking with Reece Saturday night when she came for a sleep over

I watch as his mouth open and closes at the same time

He waited for a moment

Him: That t-that daughter of a bi-

He stops mid sentence

Him: Did you kick her ass ?

Me: Is that the only way you know to fix things. ?

Him: You prefer talking to her then ?

I shrug

Him: You find your friend in the middle of a makeout session with your boyfriend in your house,room. and you still want to talk ? Thyini! Ungum' Samaria Olungileyo eh ?, if I were you bendiz' okhaba esos'febe sinye .

He said using foul language

I glared at him

Me: Well it's a good thing that I'm not you then, I'm not going to go around trashing for a guy. My mama never raised me to be like that,I won't lower my standard to hers .

He rolls his eyes at me

Him: Have you talked to Reece ?

I shook my head ,No

Me: I don't want to.

Him: Eh ? Uya mazi lamfana uya Nqwakuza,for

all I know he can come in here at any moment and drag you out just so you can talk to him and beg for you to talk

Me: Akhonto ndizoy thetha naye mna,infact lets just drop this whole talk because its going to stress me more,I'd rather not have that because I'll be writing a test after this break and I can't have myself distracted ,I don't wanna even think about it

Him: You have to face it sooner or later, Awuzy' avoid(er) u Nomphele

I glare at him.

.....

After school

I was packing away my stuff in an empty classroom.

Hearing the door close brought me out of my thoughts

Turning to see Entle



I just take my backpack and head towards  
the door, she blocks my way

Looking at her with my other eyebrow up,

Her: Look

She swallows nervously

Her: I'm sorry

I shrug it off

Her: I can explain.

Me: I don't want your explanation, Just get out  
of my way

Trying to pass her again, she doesn't let me as  
she puts her arm on the side of my waist.

Her: Look i-I'm lesbian. And I've been crushing  
on y-you for a while, I wasn't really going to  
confess my 'undying' love to you I till I made a  
bet with my friends, we didn't really get in a  
fight. It was just a make up story so that I can  
get close to you. I knew you'd freak out if I came

out with right just when I met you and I'd never get the chance to at least be with you. I swear I'm not into your boyfriend, I ju-just wanted to get you guys to break up so that I can make my move, which was stupid of me. look I'm really sorry. I just realized that my crush and the bet on you wasn't important more than the friendship we built, please don't throw it away.

I looked at her, my mouth opened

Shocked at what she just said

Me: T-this. Has all been a game to you ?, Playing with my feelings, just because of a stupid bet ? I thought you were my friend

Her: I am its just th-

Me: You decided to hurt , trick me . You don't have the right to call yourself my friend, friends don't backstab each . You far as playing me just so you could please them, you go back to them then and tell them your plan didn't succeed.

I say as I pass her, bumping into her shoulder on purpose..

.....

Since that day I have heard Entle's side if the story, I had to talk to Reece

Even though he didn't want to apologise because he partly claimed that it wasn't his doing, I digged it out of him.

I forgave him and Entle but she knows I wanted nothing to do with her .

It wasn't in me to hold grudges, I was a forgiving person.

Saturday evening

I had just got done bathing and I was going out with Romeo

Getting out of my room and heading downstairs where I found Oz with a couple of his friends.

I saw some familiar faces,I've seen them at  
Reece's house..right

Mumbling out a hello

Oz: Aren't you going to cook something for your  
brother ?

Me: I'm n-

I was about to say I'm not his maid but o was  
Interrupted by some guy

"She's a great cook eh ?"

He said matter of fact

Oz looked at him confusedly

Oz: Huh ?

Guy: I've once tasted his food at Reece's house

My breath hitched in my throat as he said that

Oz: Reece's h-

He turns to look at me

Oz: W-what were you doing at Reece's house ?

He asked now looking more confused

Tangling my fingers, trying to figure out what to say

Me: Uh me u

Oz: Y'all get the fuck out !

He yelled out at his friends, quickly fumbling out

I was left Alone with my fuming

Him: What is he to you ?

He asked

How do you tell your brother that you are dating ?

His friend at that .

Him: Answer me.

Me: Well uh- Him and I a-are

Him: You aren't dating him are you ?

He must have took my silence for an answer because the next thing I know I'm back slapped

Him: AWUSOZE ALONA !

He yelled out throwing the glass he once had on the wall ,making it shutter at an instant

Turning to look at me.

Him: Whatever it is that you two have going on stops now. I don't want you associated with him, Ndiyamazi Alona he'll use you and then I-

Me: He won't.

I looked at his surprised face as he took in what I said

He chuckled in disbelief

Him: Okay. So all while long uman' usithi you're sleeping over at Romeo's house were you really there or Ubhanxa mna ?

Me: Sometimes,but it-

Back slapping me once again,making me fall on the couch looking up at him with my hand on my cheek

Him: You should know better than to lie to me

Alona

And so it went on and on with the argument until we got to the part where aye waphuncuka saying he's also in a gang.

He should know how people like them operate. By that he also meant I was not fit enough to date someone like Reece.

[11/08, 15:55] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 37

It Friday evening and I was alone at the house, Oz ebengekho

It was rare of him to be indoors on a weekend.

Him and I kinda fixed things but he still didn't approve of my relationship with Reece.

I was just sitting alone, watching some movie with a bag of chips on my side.

Pirates of the Caribbean, oh well I have watched for many times that I knew a couple of lines. I

could never get bored with it though

A notification sound I heard from the door,  
getting up to see who it might be

Reece's car appeared on the screen

Buzzing him in, I opened the door to wait for him

He got in a few minutes later, looking at his  
bored expression

I didn't care at this moment, I was just happy to  
see him        boo yah !

Going over to him, tip toeing just so I could  
wrap my arms around his neck

he puts his around my waist then pecks my lips

Him: Someone is happy to see me

Me: I didn't see you all week

Him: But I always call

Me: It's not enough

I pout up at him



Me: So what have you been up to that you don't have time to come see me ?

I ask looking up at him

Him: Well let's go and you'll find out

Me: Huh ?

Him: Masambe (let's go )

Me: Where to ?

He stares down at me

How much he hated being questioned.

I quickly go up to my room to change to my clothes since I was wearing pajamas.

.....

25+ minutes later, he was parked outside the warehouse / headquarters

The last time I was here it didn't end well

Me: W-What am I doing here ?

He doesn't answer me , instead he gets out and

comes to open the door on my side for me to get out

I look at him before stepping out of the car

He takes my hands and leads me inside

Me: I-I don't w-want to go in there

Him: Alona

He says warningly

I still shook my head, No

He grabbed my arm in a firm grip and Literally dragged me inside.

We weren't through some corridors before standing outside some door

He turns to look at me, before turning to open the door and getting in

I was about to follow him in but what I heard next stopped me on my tracks

Scream of pain, dragging me in once again

I'm met with an unfamiliar smell, looking at a figure

Chained in a metal pole like thing

Both hands tied up with a chain above his head

Battered and bruised, almost unrecognizable

My breath hitched in my throat

He was almost unconscious

Open cuts, oozing blood

His below point , dried blood that had turned dark

Lungelo

I gagged

Turning to get out but Reece's harshly gripped me by my arm

Me: N-Ndiyeke

I said, My heart was thumping so hard in my chest

I was starting to sweat,scared

It felt like I couldn't breath

Him: Alona,Alona just take a deep breath.

I shook my head

Him: You're going to face him, don't cower. I'm here, he won't do anything okay ?

Me: I d-

"If it ain't m-my hot step-daughter who could it be ?,came to see d-daddy ?,how about we finish where we left off ?

Lungelo slurred out,as he continued to cough out blood

I tensed up at his words, Having flashbacks of him on top of me

Before I could blink out the tears, I saw Reece on him, punching him repeatedly

Me: R-Reece

I croaked out to him, for him to stop what he

was doing

But he didn't listen

Lungelo: Its been a while since I had a virgin, her mom's pussy had given up already.

He continues to push Reece's buttons

Me: REECE !

He stopped for a moment,I had never seen the look on his face right now

He was beyond pissed

Reece: You and I know you don't have a penis now,the last pussy you had . Hold on to the memory of the last pussy you had fucked because you ain't never fucking again .

He said smugly, making Lungelo's jaw twitch as he tried to kick out of the chains

Lungelo: Son of a bitch !

He spit out on Reece's face

Turning with a jaw breaking punch

Lungelo: Go ahead and make my death short and sweet

He said laughing manically

Reece: I think you might just spend another week of tormenting on those chains.

He said as he called in some guy, Sabelo.

Reece: Dance with him

He said before motioning me to follow him out to his car.

The whole drive to his house had been quite

I was thinking about what happened.

Parking his car on the drive way, We both get out and head inside

I think I needed a shower right now, going upstairs to his bathroom

Stripping my clothes off and let the hot water hit my skin, It was kinda relaxing.

I got out a couple of minutes later. Finding him

standing outside the balcony with a glass of  
whisky in hand

Me: Can you drive me h-

My voice came out hoarsely

Him: No.

He said his final, leaving no room for discussion

Me: Oz

Him: I don't fucken give a shit what he said !

He yelled at me making me flinch on the spot

Changing into his clothes, and tucking myself in  
bed I try to fall asleep.

.....

Him: I have waited so long for this day

Me: P-please

He laughed darkly

Him: Are you begging me to fuck you ?

I shook my head

Me: Lungelo p-please just don't

Him: Don't worry,I'll give you the time of your life.Maybe we can come with one or two Lungelo juniors

Me: No!

I screamed at him

Tearing my dress apart now brushing my breasts

I try to kick out but it felt like something or someone was holding me back .

"Alona,Alona"

Waking up in a pool of my own sweat

Looking around frantically for any traces of him

I was dreaming

Yet it felt so real

Looking at Reece's worried face beside me

He held me close to his chest



Him: His not here, He's not coming for you ever again

Me: P-promise ?

Him: I promise, now just calm down

Taking in a deep ,

Reece takes stay awake with me till I fell asleep again.

[11/08, 15:55] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 38

"So you'd rather disrespect me just to please your boyfriend hu "

Oz said,when I got home the following morning

I had just opened the door and he was coming from upstairs.

I didn't know what to say nor do at this moment,I was feeling guilty

Me: Xolo.

That's all I could say

Him: Xolo nto Alona ?

Me: F-For sleeping out when you told me not to.

I said looking at him,he wasn't mad at me,but the look he had directed towards me made me feel like I have disappointed him like he didn't know who I was anymore.

I didn't like it,I hated letting him down.

He just shook his head and headed towards the kitchen.

I spent the whole day in my room after that. I wasn't feeling well ,it's not that I was sick or anything but I was just feeling down

Thinking about all that has been happening lately.

Apparently I had fallen asleep and I was woken up by a phone call,Reece telling me that he was waiting for me outside

I wasn't in the mood but actually thought I should go out because I wanted to talk to him.

Getting inside his car and greeting him

Him: You took your time.

He said, kissing the corner of my.

Me: Always expecting me to jump up and drop whatever I was doing because ' you ' want to see me

Him: Come out with it. This is your way of trying to give me a piece of your mind.

How he knew me so well

Me: If you are going to continue to treat me the way you treat me, controlling and bullying me then I don't think I'll be willing to try this.

Disrespect me all you want but you're crossing the line when you think you are going to do it to my family too, I'm not okay with it. I'm not okay with you demanding and always wanting things to go your way, when I try to make you see

things my way uyandi'lwa because what you want you get (Taking in a deep breath and letting it out) Reece please, just imagine if you were in my shoes. How I must have feel when you make me do something that I don't want to do, forcing me. Making me go against my own brother, do you know how much I have been in trouble with him lately ?

He doesn't say anything, instead he puts his hands on either side of my face and leans down to kiss me, it went for a couple of minutes before I put my hands on top of his to pull away.

Me: Reece

I sigh

Him: Ndikuvile Kaloku Princess yam.

He pecks my lips

Me: You heard me but it doesn't mean you actually going to stop ?

Him: Alona ufuna ndithini na ngoku ?

I shook my head

Him: I won't get in the way of your relationship with your brother,

Me: Can I go back inside now. ?

He sighed

Him: Hamba Alona.

He said a little bit frustrated.

Opening the door and stepping out

I head home to start cooking supper

I went all out,cooking his favourite meal just to make him feel appreciated or something.

When I was done,I dished up and went to hand him his plate before I sat down next to him.

Me: I don't like it when we fighting

Him: As long as usa zenz' intombi endala,sise zoqhube kekanti.

Me: I'm sorry then if I came out to be like that.

He nod,probably couldn't say a thing because his mouth was full

How much he liked eating.

Him: This is great

He said with food in his mouth, it actually came out like ' Thwis ihs gweath'

Before I could say something, there was a knock at the door

I know He expected me to get up and go open, sighing in annoyance

I unlock it

Finding two guys by the door,one's back on me in the middle of a phone call while the other nod at me supposedly a greeting before passing through me inviting himself in.

Impatiently waiting for the one on the phone, he finally turns

Staring at my face for a moment before his eyes trailed up and down my body

Clearing my throat in frustration to catch his attention

Him: Were you eavesdropping ?

Me: Why would I, It didn't quite catch my attention

I watch as his eyebrow rise up in amusement

Him: Ah. But you certainly got mine.

He said leaning against the door

Me: You getting in or what. ?

Him: Can I first get your number ?

" You stay the fuck away from my sister Lu or I'll dry your ball sack,she's not to be messed with"

I heard Oz shout out

The guy who I just found out his name is 'Lu'  
Winked at me before he made his way in

Him: You didn't tell me your little sister is hot.

Oz: Stay in your lane bro, so xabana.

He said glaring at the guy while the guy also glared back.

Lu: Don't forget who you talking to, I'm also in your level you know ? I'm not one of the guys in your g-

The other cleared his throat, making his presence know and stopping whatever that was going to brew between these two.

Him: So.. The shipm-

Oz cleared his throat, not letting the guy finish.

Oz: Alona, can you maybe like go in your room ?

Rolling my eyes ,I guess he didn't want me to hear whatever they were about to talk about.

Getting up with my plate and up to my room .

Laying on my bed eating while I was texting with Romeo on the side.



Me: What ?

Him: I don't know how to tell you.

Me: Are you pregnant ?

I texted, laughing at my own joke.

Him:

Him: Rumor has it that Enzo impregnated some chick.

Wow.

Swallowing the lump in my throat.

No matter how much I thought that I had already gotten over him ,doesn't mean there isn't going to be that little bit of hurt when I heard something about him.

Me: Who ?

Him: That one who used to have beef with you over him.

I was in the middle if replying back when my phone started ringing an incoming text.

An unknown number appears on the screen

Looking at it for a couple of minutes confused before deciding to pick up.

Me: Hello.

' Your voice sounds even more cuter on the phone '

Me: Who is this

Him: I'm offended that you've already forgotten my voice when I just had a couple of words with you about a few minutes back.

Wait a minute, I think I know the voice

Me: Lu ?

I asked uncertain

Me : How did you get my number ?

I asked , I was shocked

Him: I had hold of your brothers phone.

He said smugly.

Thyini Thixo !

[11/08, 15:56] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 39

Waking up Monday earlier than usual for a morning run before going to school.

I was a bit late so I went straight to class without seeing Romeo who I'm probably sure is dying to have a word with me.

After a few hours of lessons I had gone to wait for Romeo on our usual spot.

I waited for a couple of minutes before I decided to text him and ask his whereabouts but I already had a text from him which I didn't notice

WILL BE BUSY WITH PRACTICAL ASSIGNMENT  
.WON'T SHOW UP FOR LUNCH. SORRY xx

Guess I'll be eating lunch alone then.

Putting my phone back in my pocket and walking to the food stalls to get myself something to eat

Just a packet of lays,Turning to leave not paying attention to my way

I bump into someone,Looking up to see Enzo and his girlfriend

Her: Watch were you going,are you trying to hurt us or what ?

She said her hand on her stomach

So it was true eh.

Her: Andazi yinto le uyifunayo kum, ndikwenze ntoni lent' ba you'd try to hurt me and my still growing baby .

She said getting emotional as he snuggled to Enzo's side

So it was true.

Enzo: Apologise.

He said sternly, looking at me.

Rolling my eyes inwardly

Me: I'm sorry.

I said politely

They thought I was going to put up a fight about it

But let me just be the bigger person and walk away. You should have seen their facial expressions.

After school

We were at the mall with Romeo window shopping, just passing time because neither of us wanted to go home.

Him: So you didn't reply to my last text last night, got me worried. Thinking what I told you might have hurt and you ended up crying yourself to sleep

Me: Oh please why would it ?, it has nothing to

do with me. I just had an incoming call that I wasn't expecting, got me distracted

Him: Who was it from ? What was it about ?

Me: Lu h-

Him: Wait, Lu ? Ngubani ngo lowo

I shrugged

Me: Some guy who I think is my brothers friend, he came by the house yesterday night and he kinda flirted with me, bendi ngekhi kulonto wethu mna but anyway he managed to get my number

Romeo: From ...

Me: He said he got hold of my brothers phone and Stole it from it

Romeo: Is he hot ?

Yes

Me: Romeo! I have a boyfriend for God's sake.

Him: Well he wont kill you for looking

Me: Sure he won't

Sarcasm.

Him: Okay.so what did he want ?

Me: He wants us to be friends.

Him: Yeah right, every guy's line of saying he wants you but doesn't want to freak you out yet .

Me: I think his fun though I might just consider it.

Him: Reece ?

Me: Utheni ?

Him: I didn't think he's going to like this

Me: I don't care, it's my life and whom I choose to befriend has nothing to do with him. He has his own set of friends and I never say anything about them

Him: Well this is different .

Me: Who's side are you in ?

He shrugs

Him: Neither. I'm just looking out for you.

Me: I know what I'm doing

Him: Okay Yhoo, don't bite my head off

I chuckle

Me: It's too big to fit in my mouth

He looks at me with his mouth open

He faintly punches my arm

Him: Everything is big for you mouth, even  
Reece's dick.

He said smugly, wiggling his eyebrows

Me: Ew what ?, Romeo !

I screeched at him, I was about to pounce on  
him when I heard a voice from behind

"Hey"

Turning to see the source of voice, I'm met with  
Lu



Me: I'd say you're following me

He chuckled

Hum: Just a pure, coincidence. Still looking sexy even in your school uniform.

He says biting his lower lip

Me: You such a big flirt.

I said folding my arms to my chest looking up at him

Him: Well I can't help it, especially when I see you

" nywe nywee he wants to friends, friends my ass"

I heard Romeo mumble beside me.

Clearing my throat

Me: Uh Lu this is my friend Romeo, Romeo.. this is Lu.

Lu just nod towards his direction

Him: Can I steal your friend for a couple of minutes ?

Romeo shrugged,

Him: Sure. (Looking at me) I'm heading home, see you tomorrow eh ?

I nod, we hug and then part ways.

Lu: Mind if we grab a bite ?,just want to chat with you.

Me: Okay

Lu: Mug n Bean ?

I shook my head

Me: Too fancy for someone wearing school uniform.

Him: Spur then ?

Me: I can live with it.

He chuckled.

We made our way to spur, got seated.

We were immediately attended so now we were waiting for our order.

Me: So ubus' yaphi or usukaphi when you bumped into me.

He scratches the back of his head

Him: Um u- was going to purchase some Xbox gadget for my brother, I had promised to get it for him if he promised to behave just for a day

Me: Trouble maker ?

Him: A big one, Enough about him. So tell me something about yourself.

Me: What ?

He shrugs

Him: Anything.

Oh well.

We spent the whole hour and something getting to know each other.

He paid for the food and we made our way out

He offered to drive me home and I didn't refuse.

Getting in his posh car

Him: So its almost impossible for someone so pretty like you to not be involved with someone.

Me: I knew you were going to ask that somehow. Well.. I'm with someone

I sighed

Me: His name is Reece and we've been going for a while now ,first started off complicated , didn't want anything to do with him. To cut a long story short I ended up falling for him and yeah ..

Him: You love him and he loves you.

He finished off for me.Turning to look at him and his smug look on.

I nod

Him: Enough for him to kill for you ?

I shrugged

Me: You know him ?

I asked.

Him: Yeah, very. His a friend of your brother and I'm a 'friend' ( making the word more clearer) of your brother,same cycle so I've bumped to him a couple of times .

He said his face now stoic

Him: Oh look we're here,They say when you having a good time, time quickly passes by. Wish I could spend more time with you but you have to get to your stuff and I have to get to mine.

I nod

Me : Yeah

Him: I'll see you some time ?, maybe I can call you later

Me: Sure, I'm okay with that.

Him: Good.

Opening the door to get out

Him: No hug ?

I turn to look at him

Him: Well friends hug, you did it with that Romeo guy now what about me ?

He asked, smiling lightly

I chuckled, wrapping my arm around his neck. We shared a brief hug before I quickly went out and headed home

[11/08, 15:56] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 39 continued

Later that day

I was sitting with Reece in his car that was parked a couple of houses away.

I was munching on some biltong I found somewhere in the car

Him: Yay'thanda lento yakho Alona

Me: Mhh ?

Guess he must have been talking and I was too busy savoring the taste that I forgot he was beside me

He sighs in frustration

Him: I'm going away for a week

Turning to look at him so quick I'm surprised I didn't get a whiplash

Me: Uyaphi ? (Where to)

Him: Somewhere

Me: Somewhere ? Reece just give me a straight answer

Him: Just take what I'm giving you undiyeke, Alona

He said running his hand through his hair.

His all the time move when he's annoyed

Me: Stop treating me like a Kid and be honest with me ,just let me in for once

Him: Let you in,in my dealings ?

He asked and I didn't answer him

Him: Unguye ke umntana Alona so yeka uzenza mdala u jong' incwadi zakho qha. ( You are,Alona. Stop acting like an elder and just focus on your books)

Yhu !,I looked at him in disbelief at what he just said to me

My mouth opening and closing at the same time lost for words.

Throwing lo biltong somewhere on his side,I furiously opened the door and got out heading home when he abruptly pulled me by my arm to turn back

Thrashing around

Me: Ndiyeke Maarn ! (Leave me alone)



I said

Him: Alona.

Me: Ndiyeke mna mntana ndiyo Hoya incwadi zam kaloku. (Leave me thee 'child' to go look at my books)

I said using all my strength to push him away from me while I ran back home.

Bumping to my brother who was coming from the kitchen, I quickly go upstairs to my room before he could say something

Getting myself under the blankets

Reece thought I was okay with him prying into my business and then not let me in, in his. I was pretty sure if I was the one saying I'll be away for a couple of days he would have demanded to know and ebengaz' undiyeka until I told him.

I just needed to know where he was going that's all.

I was tired off him always shutting me out.

.....

For the next couple of days,I was doing what  
Reece told me to do

Focusing on my books.

He'd tried calling me on my phone but I'd always  
reject it

I didn't want to talk to him.

Waking up Wednesday morning and getting  
ready for school

I went to eat breakfast then Oz drove me to  
school because he was in the mood

Him: I'll pick you up after school and maybe we  
can go to the mall

He said as he parked next to the school  
entrance

Me: How about I bunk now and we could go

I smirked at him

He kissed my cheek

Him: Voetsek phuma.

He said

Oh well it was Oz after all, he hated when I messed around with my school work

Me: Grandpa.

I mumbled

Him: Me ? You know what ?,maybe you can get a lift after school and forget the trip because I think I might have another plan in mind

Quickly hugging his side

Me: Xolo ke.

Him: Mh ?

He asked,feeling like something was missing from what I said

Me: Bhut'wam. ( My brother )

He knew how much I hated boosting his ego.

Him: Mh?

Me: Endim'thandayo

I said,satisfied with my answer

He said he'll pick me up after school,getting out of his car and making my way inside the school just when the bell rang

I quickly went to my class.

At Break

I was with Romeo in our usual spot eating lunch and in the middle of a chat

Him: So you are mad at Reece uh ?

I nod

Him: For making you feel small and making it worse by saying you're just a highschool girl that is not mature enough

Me: Well

Him: You could change the way he sees you

I look at him furrowing my eyebrows

Me: How. ?

Wiggling his eyebrows

Him: I don't know. Maybe you could start by wearing something like a lingerie or anything sexy when you're sleeping over his house. Bring it up to him whenever and However he wants 'it' and stop whining

I poused for a moment

Me: Uphambene. How is that going to help ?

He chuckles

Me: You're not even helping right now.

He shrugs nonchalantly.

I shook my head

Me: I'm not going to turn to something that I'm not, If he feels like I'm too childlike for him then makand'yeke. He should love me for what I am and stop criticizing me.

I said, well I didn't want him to leave me but -

Him: Hayke. Don't come crying to me when he leaves you for someone with much more experience When i have given you a chance to improve yourself.

Me: He won't

I say grumpily, tossing the half eaten apple

That had now turned brown because I was too distracted to take a bite from it.

.....

A busy day at the Mall it was. It was a Friday after all

After the 2 hours of getting in and out of shops because this day they decided to put all the eye catching clothes on the display windows , We were tired and I have gotten myself a few things and right now we were headed to the salon because I wanted box braids.

Me: I want them long

Oz: Your hair is already long, will it work ?

I shrug,

Me: They'll make a plan

Thank god it wasn't a long cue

We waited for a couple of minutes while the  
Hairstylist was busy with the last client

Came my turn, I told her what I wanted

She told me she can't braid my hair unless I let  
her cut it into a manageable length, I simply  
refused telling her I'd rather do something else

Turning to Oz for a suggestion

He shrugged

Him: Whatever that is going to get that unruly  
hair out of your face

I glared at him

Me: I'll settle for a straight back.

She First washed my hair,shampooed then  
conditioned it before she started with the style.

When she was done, Oz payed then we went for takeaways before he drove home.

Sitting with a fleece blanket on the couch eating pizza, we were watching tv, well the tv was watching us because we were chatting also

Him: Umhle nyan koda Minx

Me: I know.

I said smugly at him

Him: I didn't know you had a huge forehead though, it's all out now that your hair is plaited back

I turned to look at him with my mouth gape, putting my hand on my forehead

He laughs his Ass off

Him: You should have seen your face, I'm joking

Me: Mxm

I said to him,taking a bite from my slice

Him: I'm going to visit mom tomorrow, want to



tag along ?

I paused for a moment

Thinking about the conversations we had on the phone, her always asking me to pay her a visit but I didn't have the guts to Step in that house, where it all happened.

Me: Sure.

Him: Early in the morning ?

Me: Okay.

He nod before we turned to look at the last slice of pizza left in the box, looking at each other again for a moment before we both tried to get to it.

The following day we went to visit our mom

And let me say,we had a great time together.

I thought it was all going to be Awkwardness and tension,but it was neither.

I felt at ease,the missing gap I have been trying to fill somehow, now filled.

[11/08, 15:56] +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 40

Currently sitting outside McDonald with Lu

I was having a smoothie while he had coke

Me: Well yeah I know I am but I didn't like it,especially coming from him.

Him: When last did you talk to him ?

Me: Since that day we had a fight

He nods.

Him: So did he tell you where he was going, what for ? With who?

I shook my head

Me: He didn't say anything which ended up with us getting in a argument

Him: He doesn't trust you.

Me: I think he does, just that he doesn't want to involve or stress me with his stuff

I shrug

Me: I don't know

Him: Maybe you should ask him, and if he answers a yes. You should challenge him to tell you about his 'Work '

Me: He's hard headed

Him: I know.

He said before I could ask what he meant by that, Our order arrived

Him: So when is he getting back ?

I shrug

Me: I don't know, It seems like you're interested in him. If I didn't know any better I'd say you're gay

He chuckles

Him: I could assure you very well Madamé that

I'm straight.

He said biting his lower lip before smirking

Looking at his intense eyes before looking down

Him: Is that a blush creeping in your cheeks ?

Taking a sip from my glass.

Me: No

Him: Sure its not.

Him: Did I tell you that you're beautiful.

I shrug

Him: Well,You're beautiful.

Me: Thank you

We sat for a few minutes before I asked him to drive me home because it was getting late and it was school tomorrow.

Me: So, Thank you for taking me out

I said to him as we stood outside his car a

couple of houses away from my house.

Him: I should be thanking you for agreeing

He said brushing my cheek with his finger

He looked at me for a couple of minutes before  
he leaned forward

His warm,large hand on my cheek

Our lips were inches apart,I meet him halfway

We kissed

His lips against mine,I closed my eyes

Something was off about this

His lips weren't like Reece's soft,warm like lips.

Reece.

Pulling away,clearing my throat looking  
anywhere but him

Me: W-We shouldn't be doing this.

Him: I'm sorry.

Me: Look I need to head inside

Him: Okay

Me: Sure

Turning to leave, he puts his hand on my arm  
turning me around

Wrapping his arms around my small waist, he  
brings me in for a hug

I hug him back

Nothing else said, I turn to really leave this time

When I got home, I just went to my room Cause I  
was already full

I was finishing up some assignment but came a  
part I didn't understand so I phone called  
Romeo, he explained it to me till I got it and we  
ended up chatting

I was telling him about what happened between  
Lu and I

Him: You're playing with fire Alona.

Me: Look what happened between Lu and I will

never happen again it was a thing of the moment

Him: Are you going to tell Reece ?

Me: And risk me being killed ? No.

Him: Rather you tell him because if he finds out himself, hell will break loose

Me: I know but I just want to avoid how he'll handle it.

Him: Koda nawe maarn what were you thinking going to run into Lu's arms ?

I hear him sigh on the other side.

Hearing my bedroom door open, Oz appears

Me: So i have to look at google for more information ?,It explains it better ? Okay thanks got to go .

I said hanging up not giving him a chance to say anything.

I glared at Oz as he threw himself on my bed,

bouncing back up

Me: You should learn to knock

Him: It's good to know incwadi zakho  
uzikha'thalele. Masincokole Alona

Me: Nganto ?

I ask my eyes still on the paper.

I put my paper aside to give him my full  
attention

.....

Sunday afternoon,I was sprawled out on the  
couch eating a yoghurt from its container when  
I heard knock from the door.

Since it was open I turned to look at Reece  
leaning at it his hand inside his pocket while the  
other had his phone and car keys, looking fresh  
as always.

Well this is a surprise ,I didn't expect

Coming to sit on the spot beside me,he put my



legs on top of him while he them

Removing them from him.

Him: Molo Alona.

God ,his voice.

Me: Is that all you can say right now ?,Molo Alona ? Andifuni Molo wakho mna Reece. (I don't want your Hello)

Him: Look princess-

Me: Don't tell me that you expected me to be all lovey dovey when you left for the whole week ,refusing to tell me where to and why. I'm not okay with you prying into my business and expect me to stay out of yours.

I said filling a spoon with yoghurt, bringing the spoon furiously to my mouth

He sighs in deeply.

Him: I had to sort out some gang stuff , We have new deals with new clients so I had to take

my time

I'm surprised by his calmness

Me: You telling me now ? (chuckling) Buyel' apho uvela khona Reece .

Him: Andifuni.

Me: Okay, I need to go print out my assignment

Him: Bu-

Me: Nding' umntana weSikolo Kaloku sulibal

Him: Alona I didn't mean it.

Me: I've been telling you for a while now that I don't like the way und treat(a) ngayo, It just doesn't sit well with me

Him: I know babe and ndicel' uxolo

Me: You're always sorry Reece, don't even know if you know the meaning of the word . You just saying it for the sake of saying it because you know le Backstage singer yakho indim will follow with the chorus ' I forgive you'.

He cracked up, gathering himself after he saw how serious I was

Him: I know I haven't been treating you well, I've been a jerk I've been harsh I've been..anything you can think of right now and you don't deserve that.

He said, pinching my cheeks lightly.

Him: I'll try even more harder to gather my trashy ways, I don't want to lose you. Me: O-kay (Looking at him skeptically) where's Reece ?

Him: Right here, Trying to be Sweet.

He said Smiling at me showing me his perfect white teeth.

Him: Am I forgiven ?

Me: I'm not following with that high pitched chorus, lets try something like 'Forget it'

Him: Right. I got you something from my trip.

Me: What ?

Him: First gimme a kiss.

I looked at him, rolling my eyes folding my arms to my chest.

He pecks my lips.

Him: You look beautiful, as always

He said looking at my hair.

Him: Come on

He said, helping me up

Locking the house behind, we went to his car

Another one ,different .

O thought to my self as I looked at the car admiringly.

Opening the door for me to get in.

He also got in

Opening the car thing holder and taking out a leather covered box.

Opening it and finding inside a

watch, personalized with my name, carved in its gold frame.

It was beyond the word beautiful.

I couldn't find words to describe how beautiful it was

Me: Wow.

Him: Like it ?

Me: Love, it- it's beautiful

Him: Not more than you though.

He said putting his finger under my chin turning me to look at him.

Me: Thank you

I peck his cheek

He was about to say something but was cut off by my ringing phone.

Taking it out of my pocket, Lu's name appearing on the screen

I let it ring for a few minutes

My heart beating so fast

Him: You can answer it.

I quickly reject it

Me: It's not important.

I say putting my phone aside

Taking his attention away ,I asked him to help me put on the watch

I looked at it with adoration .

Him: So what have you been up t-

My phone rings once again,looking at Reece with the corner of my eye

I swallow nervously

Switching it off.

Me: Nothing much beside focusing on my school work.

Him: Nguba lo u phone(a)yo Alona ?

Me: I never ask you that when you have an incoming call

I mumbled.

Turning to look at him,he was already looking at me

Me: I- it's Romeo.

I lie and at this point I couldn't look at him.

Him: Oh.

We sat for a few more minutes before I told him I'm heading inside because I wanted to cook dinner.

First thing I did was to call Lu.

It didn't ring for long before it was answered.

Him: Here I was thinking you're avoiding me.

Me: I wasn't, It's just that I was with.. Reece.

Him: You sorted out things. ?

Me: Yeah,kinda

Him: Uthi ebe phi ?

Me : He wasn't specific he just said he went for some new deals and new clients, it needed his full attention and blah blah blah

He chuckles

Lu: Look I'll call you back later, I need to bounce

Me: Okay.

I said hanging up then going to make myself noodles before going to bed early.

SORRY FOR THE WAIT. ♥

[11/09, 08:11] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 41

Lu and I were really close. I loved spending time with him.

He spoiled me alot and we weren't out together alot unlike u Reece who I saw once in a while because he was supposedly busy.



Lu is always there when I need him unlike  
Reece wh-

Okay look at me comparing them.

Romeo was even complaining,saying I'm always  
out with Lu and never got time for him.

Bekungekh'o mntu ondibuza ntoni. Bendo  
nwabile nje qha.

I was with Lu at his house and we were  
currently watching a movie while I had a packet  
of popcorns' to myself

It was around 2 pm,and we just decided to lock  
the door and stay inside.

I was so into the movie while he fooled around  
because the movie was too boring for him, it  
wasn't action.

He was currently playing with my hair, combing  
it with his hands.

Trying to get it off

Me: Lu !

Him: Ndi Hoyo kaloku (pay attention to me)

Me: I want to watch this

Him: And I want you to watch me.

I swat his hand away then turn to look at the screen.

It wasn't a couple of minutes before I felt him bugging me again

Tracing his finger from the side of my face, then to my collar bone

Him: Your skin is so smooth.

He said,glaring at him for interrupting me once again

He pouts innocently

Him: Can I have some ?

He said looking at the bowl

I shook my head

Extending his hand to take it from me, I move it away

He tickled me till I lost hold of it, letting them splitter on the floor

He continued to tickle me , now on top of me, putting his weight on his arms holding himself

Him: I like it when you smile.

He said.

Leaning forward,he kisses me

Our lips moving in sync.

His hand placed on the side of my waist, brushing it

I let his hand roam my side freely, putting it under my top to caress my skin

He pushes his body a little bit forward to feel on mine.

His slim fingers brushing lightly on the top of my bra line.

I had my eyes close shut and then a face pops  
in my head

Jumping up causing him to move a little bit  
away from me, giving me my own personal  
space.

No words exchanged,it was silent for a moment  
before he cleared his throat

Looking at his facial expression

He looked like he was debating with himself

Him: I'm s-

Me: Don't.

I cut him short, I didn't want to hear it

We were both responsible for what just  
happened.

Placing both my hands on his firm chest to  
push him away from me

I got up and fixed my top, brushing my  
imaginary messy hair

I took my bag -back pack

Clearing my throat,

Me: I think I should go

Him: Please don't, I won't do it a-

Me: No it's not you, or this. It's just that I need to get home

Him: Okay

He said getting up, taking his car keys from the table and I followed him out

I got home and oz wasn't there, he had told me that he was going out

To have 'fun' with his friends and there might be a possibility that he won't come home because obviously he was going to leave with some chick and he knew how I hated it when he brought his one night stands here

One of the things I like about him, he gets me.

I went up to my room to change into my

pyjamas before I went downstairs to the kitchen to fix a little dinner for myself.

I think sausage and pap

I knew the dish will also help with my brothers hangover tomorrow morning.

After I had cooked my pap, I buttered it before putting it aside and started doing the sausage.

My phone rings, taking it from the kitchen counter

I answer it

" I'm coming there, open up"

Reece

Going to unlock on the system.

I waited for him by the door but he was taking too long because he was on the phone and Imbiza yam ibizotsha so I went to the kitchen to stir it

It wasn't few minutes before I heard Reece's

foot steps

I had my back to him while I stirred .

Encircling my waist with his arms

He rested his chin on my collarbone after  
kissing my cheek

Him: My princess

Me: Hey

I said snuggling up a bit on his warm body with  
my back

Him: Unjani ?

Me: I'm fine, you ?

Him: I'm okay now that I'm seeing you.

Me: Yeah ?

He nod.

Him: I missed you all day long, ubusenzan le  
mini ?

Clearing my throat

I shrug

Me: Nothing much than chilling with a friend.

Him: A friend ?

Me: Yeap.

I said popping the p.

Closing the pot I was stirring and putting it on the sife

Me: ..And what were you doing all day.

I asked, giving him no chance to ponder on curiosity

Him: Ucimba ndisis' bhanxa ne ?

He asked , in his low and deep voice.

Making me freeze on the spot, thinking about what he is on about.

I swallowed the lump on my throat

Me: Huh ?

He chuckled at my confused state



Taking his phone out, putting the password in.

With a few swipes, he showed me the screen

A short video clip

Looking at it with my eyes now open

There was, Me in the middle of a make out session with Lu.

Taking his phone back to his pocket, he looked down at me.

Opening my mouth but nothing comes out.

I take a step back, Reece is unpredictable

Him: Alona.

He said warningly, he hated what I'm doing

Me: I'm sorry.

Him: Did you sleep with him ?

Him: Answer me!

He yelled out in his booming voice, making me flinch

I quickly shook my head

He tried to come towards me but I quickly moved to the other side

I was shaking luloyiko.

Tears streamed down my cheeks

Me : I swear I didn't plan all that, he was just a good friend and then (Swallowing nervously) one thing led to another but I swear I didn't sleep with him, I swear I didn't.

I said in one breath

Him: Izapha Alona

I shook my head

Me: You are going to hit me Reece . Look I'm sorry .I really didn't mean for it to happen, we just spent alot of time together. He was there for me when you weren't and he never refused to spend time with me,unlike you. But what happened was a once off mistake. It wasn't my intention,I really feel guilty and I ca-

I stopped rambling when he had my arm in a death grip, I screamed startled

I don't know when he got to me

Me: R-Reece please

Him: Sapha I phone yakho Alona

Giving it to him with my trembling hand, he snatched it from me

He let go of me as he was busy going through my phone

I slowly took a few steps back, he is going to react and it's best if i'm away from him.

I looked at him as he now glared at me, his jaw twitching

He threw my phone at me but I managed to dodge in time before it hit my face,instead it hit the wall

I could here it shatter into pieces behind me.

I looked at him in pure shock

Him: I thought you would have learnt your lesson by now but clearly I was wrong, you trust easily. That fucker you were messing with was just using you to get to me and yet again you're were too fucken blind to see

Me: How were I suppose to know. ?

Him: You're dating a gang member for god sake you could have figured it out. And disadvantage of dating someone like me is that,my enemies will get to you if they can't get to me or through me. Its like you're almost living my life and you should be on the lookout always.Going to pour stuff out to some stranger who seems to can't end a conversation without involving my name,you should have figured it out. Doing what you did with him knowing you've got me m

-

Me: Ubuphi ?

I asked,cutting him short.

Him: Bendiphi ? Jonga sundi buza ukunya yeva ?  
I thought you appreciated your own space,own  
time. For you to focus on your studies,your  
doing matrix surely you need it and bendi' nga  
zu soloko ndise mva kwakho. Clearly I was also  
wrong about giving you that ngoba nako  
ubalekela kwi enemy yam, feeding him  
Information about me,talking about me to keep  
your relationship afloat.

Shit.

I should have known.

Him: How much have you told him ? Every  
single shit I tell you, you tell him hu ?

Not waiting for me to answer.

He turns his back on me running his hands on  
his face in frustration ,he was pissed.

Me: Bendingayazi. ( I didn't know)

I said quietly.

Him: Bunga' yazi ? What about the part were

you threw yourself at him like a cheap whore ?  
You also didn't know that when you get in any  
type of a relationship with a man it was bound  
to get where it got with you . You also didn't  
know that he was going to video shoot your  
little make out session to send it to me ?,to rub  
it my face ? That sooner or later I was going to  
know about it your little secret ?

He asked,fisting up his knuckles to a point  
where they turned whiter

Him: Seeing his dirty hands all over your  
body,he was enjoying himself and so were you  
that you didn't even see the mischievous smirk  
he had

Me: I wasn't, did you see the part where I  
pushed him off me. I thought about y-

Him: It doesn't matter, he touched you anyway.  
No one should be in a position like that with you  
either than me. I'm going to cut off his balls wh-  
He stopped talking.

I fiddled with my fingers while sniffing into engapheliyo.

It was quite for a moment before I saw him coming towards me, standing in front of me

He lifted his hand up

Making me flinch, sucking in my breath as I closed my eyes waiting for the impact but it never came.

He wiped my wet cheeks with the back of his hand then he wrapped his arms around me, bringing me close to lay my head on his chest as he rubbed soothing circles with his hand on the small of my back.

Him: Shh princess, I'm sorry.

I continued to sob on his chest

Him: I'll sort this out.

He said combing my hair with his hand.

[11/09, 08:11] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 42

I was at school the following day.

Currently at lunch break with Romeo

I had no appetite for food or anything right now

I just wanted to be left alone and Romeo thought otherwise.

Him: Alona Awuz' utya kengoku ?

I shook my head

He sighed in defeat.

Him: I don't want to say this, I know its probably not a good thing to say right now. You don't want to hear it b-

Me: Just say it.

Wait for it

Him: Bendi' tshilo ( I told you)

Him: I did tell you that you were playing with fire



and that Ikhona into e fishy ngala Lu ndini..

Me: Yes Romeo you did warn me. And telling me over and over again, ain't helping right now.

Him: Is Reece mad at you ?,of course he is what am I even asking.

He mumbled the last part to himself.

Him: Have you talked to Lu ?

I shook my head ,no.

Him: Okay Cleary you don't want to talk so I'm gonna leave you to be.

And that is how we spent the whole break, sitting in silence.

.....

Going home after school

I got home and found Oz who was with mom,In the middle of a chat while they had some snacks on the side

Me: Having a great time here hu ? Forgetting

about me mna mntu who's at school. Beni ngano ndicinga nge transport maybe ?( wouldn't you have picked me up maybe. ?)

I said pouting furiously as I sat down next to mom.

Her: Awww, You look tired.

Me: Yeah .Chaos at school,we were in the middle of some wannabe gangs fight.

Her: Ndand tshilo ngasi sikolo sakho , ndandi the iza ndikuse eba Lungwini.( I've always disapproved of that school, I once offered to take you to the whites / private school and you refused).

I don't know how many countless times we have had that discussion

Me: Mom Gangs are everywhere. Even in those white schools,yeka nje banga fane ba phuncuke phambi kwabantu ,maybe they're undercover.

She shrugs

Her: But still, I still think it would have been better. You're not safe anyway, Andazi ngabantu ababe velaphi aba ( I don't know where all such people come from), what is the purpose of hurting another person. ?,uzo fumana ntoni ?(what are you going to get ?) And then its worse because they also sell drugs inside the school premises if not in the community.

Clearing my throat looking at Oz with the corner of my eye.

Me: It's my last year anyway. So I won't have to deal with the chaos.

Mom: You just said that it yourself that its everywhere.

I shrugged

Oz: As long as you not talking about pads and pregnancy and stuff, I'm willing to listen.

He said trying to get our attention away from the topic.

Mom: Speaking of pregnancy.

Mom said looking at me.

I glared at oz for bringing up the topic

And that is how it all went, lectures and lectures from both sides.

I don't know how Oz fit in, in all of this but he seemed to be enjoying it xa into iza ngakum.

I had just been woken up from a nap by my ringing phone later on Midnight

Checking the caller id with blurry eyes.

Lu

Now fully awake, I was eager for this call all day long to hear what lies is he going to feed me knowing what I know now.

I answered hello.

Him: Were you asleep ?

Nope, Out somewhere Skydiving.

I mean what normal person would still be wide awake by now ?

Me: Yes.

Him: Sorry to wake you up beautiful but I just wanted to hear your voice.

Me: What else do you want ?,A chat about Reece

Him: That is n-

Me: I know what you have been up to

Him: What I've been up to ?

He asked sounding somewhat confused.

He can't fool me this time.

Me:Me: You and Reece have some sort of a issue and you were using me to get him .

He doesn't answer.

Me: You sent that video clip to Reece.

I said matter of fact

Him: Why would I ?

Me: You forgot to ask what video clip I'm talking about before asking that question

Him: What are you talking about Alona ?

I snorted, unladylike of me I know.

Me: Last time I was at your house. We ( taking a deep breath in) kissed. You got it in a video and sent it to Reece. Ucimb' usa bhanxa bani ?

Him: I did such ? What if he is the one who got you followed ? I know how possessive, obsessed people in the game can be. Maybe h-

Me: Are you going to continue to lie ?

It was silent on the other side for a moment

Him: There's no use anymore right. ? (chuckles)  
I got what I wanted. Some information about him. To start mission ' Mess up his life " and break you guys apart on the way, something I

have already managed to do

So Reece was right.

Quickly recovering from my shock

Me: We still together You Moron

He chuckles.

Him: Not for long though

He said before he hung up on me.

TO BE CONTINUED ♥

[11/09, 08:15] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 42  
continued

After I had that phone call from Lu that day, I  
never heard from him again

We lost contact

I had told Reece about it and also asked him  
what was his deal between them

He just said Lu is one of his many enemies that I shouldn't worry about because he was going to sort him out, I guess you all know what he meant by that.

It was Friday night and I had asked Romeo to come for a sleep over since my brother was away for the weekend.

We were currently in my room sitting cross legged on top of my bed eating some snacks while engaged in a chat when my phone started ringing

I couldn't really see who it was now, because as time went on

My phone started to blur in a weird way, The effect of the fall in Reece hands were kicking in.

Me: Hello

' Princess '

Me: Reece.

Him: Who do you think it was ?



Me: I don't know, can't even see on this phone

Him: What are you doing ?

Me: I'm with Romeo, watching movies at my house

Him: Where's your brother ?

Me: He's not coming back until Sunday.

Him: Mhh- how about I pick you up for a sleep over ?

Me: Hayi.

I declined his offer

I wasn't going to take advantage of my brothers trust.

Him: Awufuni ?

Me : It's not that, but I made a promise to him that I won't get to any bad

Him: But I miss you.

Me: Maybe you can come pick me up tomorrow

and we can spend the day.

I suggested

I heard him say something like 'Mxm' on the other side, he was irritated.

Oh well

Him: Whatever. I got to go.

That is all he said before he hung up on me.

I'm glad he didn't really put up a fight.

I put my phone aside before turning to look at Romeo who was already looking at me

Him: You know he isn't going to wait forever right ?

Me: Hu ?

Him: He is a man Alona and he has needs, noko lide elithuba elindile.

Me: He never said he wants to have 'it' with me,yet

Romeo: He doesn't have to say so .

Me: If I'm not ready th-

Him: I know you shouldn't do it because of pressure, but just take it into consideration.

I shrug.

We continued to watch the movie in silence till we fell asleep on top of the covers.

Waking up the following day, Romeo left early in the morning because he had to go to Saturday classes.

I had cleaned all the house, even did the laundry because I was bored.

After I was done with everything, I took a bath then went to make something to eat for myself before going to chill outside by the pool.

It was awfully quiet without my brother here, I was bored and it was a Saturday and I had nothing better to do

I've called Reece countless time but he wasn't picking up.

So I decided to go to his house after I was done eating, I changed into decent clothes before taking my bag-backpack with my stuff in and took a taxi to his house.

When I arrived there, the guy by the gate opened up for me

I went to the inside and found him drinking what looked like to be beer and he was busy on his laptop

Me: I thought you were picking me up ?

Him: I forgot.

He said bluntly

Him: Anyway I wanted to pick you up yesterday night wabe undi qhoshela.

Me: Kuthini uku qhoshela when I told you the reason why I couldn't sleep over ?

He ignored me and continued to type away on his laptop.

Him: Bring me a bottle of whiskey, it's somewhere on the kitchen bar. Uzoy'bona it's almost half way done

Me: How much have you drank in the last few hours. ?

Him: None of your concern, just bring the bottle or should I go take it myself ? Sure, Zobona zo'tshatwa nguba unqena kangaka. ( I'll see who's going to marry you with your laziness)

He said getting up and heading to his kitchen, What was up with him ?

He came back a couple of minutes later with a already filled glass.

I think he was a bit tipsy.

He sat down and went back to his screen.

I sat there ,I was waiting for him to finish whatever he was doing so that he can give me

his attention. I was watching some reality show  
I just got tired of the ignorance

Me: You should have said so if ubufuna  
ndihambe uyeke ube undi ignora (You could  
have said so if you wanted me to leave instead  
of ignoring me )

He turned to look at me, stopping whatever he  
was doing for a moment

He took a sip from his glass, closing his laptop  
and turning to me

He put his hand on my chin to turn me to look at  
him

He placed his lips on mine and started kissing  
me ,abit rough

I could taste the alcohol at the tip of my tongue

He pushed me backwats to lay on the couch  
while he got on top of me

His other hand took off my top, leaving me in my

bra.

Me: Reece

I called out to him for him to stop.

Putting my hands on his chest to push him off but he quickly pinned them down on either side of my head in a firm grip.

Him: I'm now giving you my attention Alona.

He said as he continued to kiss me

I think my lips were abit swollen by now.

He rubbed my outside of my thigh before his hand shoots up again to take off my bra but I used all my strength and pushed him off me.

Me: Just Stop.I-I'm n-not ready.

I said as I quickly tried to cover my chest with my hands.

I swallowed nervously as I bit my lip.

He ran his hand through his hair in what i assumed was in frustration /irritation

He was just quiet

I picked up my top and wore it

Me: I think I should go.

I said to him before I got up and headed towards The door.

He didn't even try to stop me.

[11/09, 08:18] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 43

When I got home that day,I thought about what had almost happened.

I was currently sitting on my bed,brushing my chin lightly because it kinda hurt.

I don't understand why he was mad at me.

I went to make something to eat for I then when I was done,I dished up for and ate then went up to my room for a nap

I was going to go to his house again tomorrow and demand some answers



.....

He opened up the door, only in a pair of boxers. He had just woken up and I looked at his messy bed hair that suited him somehow. His eyes were half closed half open. He turned around to throw himself on the couch

I followed after him and closed the door behind.

The house was a bit messy from yesterday bottles that has seemed to have increased the number. Meaning there were more of them now and he didn't bother to clean

Me: Were you with your friends or something ? I'm pretty sure you didn't drink all of this by yourself.

I looked at him as he closed his eyes and buried his face under the cushion.

He didn't answer me but instead mumbled something like he needed a strong black coffee.

So I went to make it for him, just how he wanted

it

Handing it to him before I sat down next to him and watched him take a sip.

Him: I lost millions worth deal, on top of that two of my most trusted guys are dead. You know who is behind it? Lu. That fucken piece of shit!

He said as he gritted his teeth at the last sentence.

I didn't know what to say

Me: I-I'm sorry.

Him: Sorry doesn't cut it right now, I hate it when something nor someone gets in the way of my work. He really messed me up and I'm going to mess him up real good when I fucken see him that he'll wish that his mama kept her legs closed. If only you could have kept your mouth shut.

Me: Reece, I know what I did was a mistake and I have been apologizing

Him: He maarn Alona,Your fucken apology won't bring back my guys.

He said as he yelled out glaring at me.

I just chose to ignore his attitude sometimes,right now I understood him so instead of starting up a fight with him.

I decided to get up and clean around abit and when I was done I went up to his room.

As I had not expected it, his bed was not made.

I quickly picked up all his clothes that were laying around and took them to the laundry room.

I was in the middle of taking his bed cover halfway down when I came across something Underwear. Not just any underwear but a girls Underwear,a thong

My breath hitched in my throat as I looked at it.

Looking around the room frantically not

knowing what to do

I could feel the tears at the brim of my eyes .

I took his phone that was placed on the side and opened it

I don't know what got into me to invade his privacy ,I wasn't ready for whatever I was going to come across but I just needed to know whatever right now. I went through his messages and all I saw mostly was this Thenjiswa name

Where have I heard that name before ?,I tried to ponder over it before a picture of that girl he was arguing with when I was at his house with a couple of his friends around popped into my mind.

I could almost see her smug look on

I didn't open any more of his messages but I couldn't help noticing that this wasn't a once of thing.

I just got mad that I ended up throwing it at a wall, making it shatter into pieces.

I didn't know what to do, pulling at my hair in frustration

I tried to control my breathing before I had one of my asthmatic moments.

I was shaking furiously. Taking the underwear with the tip of my finger.

I walked with it to the lounge

Me: Tell Thenjiswa that she forgot this.

I said as I threw it on his face.

He looked at it as it fell down before looking at me with his mouth opening and closing at the same time not knowing what to say.

That is when my tears started to betray me, streaming down my cheeks.

I wiped them furiously with the back of my hand before snatching my bag from beside him and

running out

I heard him call my name after but I ignored him as I ran out blindly.

I don't know how I got home but I found myself collapsing on top of my bed and let sleep overtake me.

I woke up with a headache,my eyes were itchy and when I went to look at myself on the mirror at the bathroom, They were swollen.

I washed my face with cold water before rummaging through the cabinets for pills.

I took two before popping them in my mouth and drank them with water then went back to my bed.

I covered myself with a fleece while I stared blankly into space.

I was thinking hard,so engulfed in my own thoughts that when my I heard my phone's ringtone it was like it was ringing far away.

I took it and squinted my eyes to see who was it  
If it was him then I'm surely not picking up.

But then it was an unrecognisable  
number. Putting the phone to my ear.

" I wasn't sure if you were going to pick up on a  
unrecognisable number but I was sure you  
weren't going to pick up if I called with mine "

It was Lu

Me: What do you want ? You got what you  
wanted now what the fuck do you want ?

I asked,swearing for the first time in my life.

Him: You.

He said

Him: I want you. I know I took what we had as a  
game but I realised that lately you're all I think  
about, I have been falling for you and I'm sorry  
what has been happening between Reece and  
I,let it affect you. You didn't deserve it and I'm

really s-

I hung up on him before he could finish,I wasn't in the mood for his crap I had bigger things to worry about right now.

Only one person I wanted to talk to right now,  
My brother

I managed to type his number and I was glad when he picked up

Him: Baby ?

Me: I'm not your baby, Oz.

I said as I tried to smile but failed miserably ,good thing he wasn't able to see me.

He chuckled.

Him: You are. Ufuna ntoni Sthandwa sam ? I'm pretty sure I left you a huge amount of money so it couldn't have ran out in only two days .

Me: I don't want anything,I miss you.

Him: Is everything okay there .?



How I wish I could pour out my heart to him about this also like everything else I share with him.

Swallowing the lump in my throat

Me: Yes. When are you coming back ?

Him: I'm not really sure, but soon. Try not to miss me much.

We continued to chat till I ran out of airtime.

I woke up a little bit late the following day for school I forgot to set the alarm. I went out in a rush not forgetting to set the system.

I was walking a couple of feet away from my house when I saw a car approach

But I paid no mind to it.

I don't really know what happened but I felt someone mask me with a wet rag

Guess I must have breathed in whatever that was in there because the next thing I know I'm

feeling dizzy then I blacked out.

[11/09, 08:19] +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 44

As I came to consciousness, My head was hurting. Many thoughts came to my mind all at once, I couldn't really think clearly.

My eyes roamed around the room I was in, my heart now beating so fast as I realised I had no idea where I was

My heart beat increased even more when I couldn't see clearly, I was scared.

The room was dimly lit.

I tried getting up but it was like something was holding me back, only then I realised that I was tied to a bed

My surroundings were spinning and my head wouldn't stop throbbing. I was trying so hard to think what actually happened

I was going to school, I was a couple of feet away from the house..I think someone came from behind and masked me with with a wet rag and I blacked out

Tears threatened my eyes as I came to the reality I was faced with.

I wanted to scream for help but it was no use with the thickness of the wall and my weak state right now.

I managed to sit up on the bed after pausing now and then from the tiredness.

It must be the after effects of whatever the person masked me with

Just as I put my head on the pillow

I heard the door of the room unlock and then it was closed loudly behind and someone appeared.

A Towering figure walked into the room. I tried focusing on the face of the person but found it

nearly impossible as my head was spinning and I was also seeing blur. I could make out short hair cut into a fade, very dark black small eyes and piercing on th- wait a minute

Me: Lu ?

I croaked out in a small voice, I felt bile rise up as I uttered my first word after being unconscious but quickly swallowed back ..

Him: Hey you're awake ?, I just wanted to welcome you here

He told me as if stealing me was the most normal thing in the world.

Me: W-Where am I

Him: Oh, my secret place. Where no one will find you.

I think he's just plain psychopath and I took him for granted

Him: I'm no psycho. I'm just a man revenging his dead brother.

I guess I must have said it aloud.

Me: W-what are you talking about ?

Him: He didn't tell you what this is all about ?  
What did I expect though

He asked as he chuckled.

Him: He killed my brother. Reece killed my brother and It was all because of a deal gone wrong, He killed him just because he messed up some deal and he was brave enough to do it in front of me and there was nothing I could do

He shook

Him: He knew I was Smart enough to not go to the police because he'd also kill me. But what he didn't know was that I was smart enough to plan my revenge. He didn't see me coming.

Reece, sendi hamba ndifel' izono zakhe.

Me: Lu please-

Him: That's what he also said when he had

been held at gunpoint by Reece,He begged and begged for his life but it all fell into deaf ears.

Me: What do I have to do with all this ?

Him: You

He said grazing my cheek with the back of his hand.

Him: You must mean something to him For him to do what he does for you because from the information I have gathered he's fuckboy who has never settled down,not once. Until he met you. Little,Beautiful,Innocent Alona.Your his weakness. Some power you have there to bring a man like him down to his feet. I don't blame him though

He said biting his lower lip as his eyes trailed up and down my body

Him: I'd also be down for you,you're worth it.

He winks at me.

Me: He h-he is going to find me,and when he

does you're better make s-sure you not going to be near me because your ass is going to get burned

He chuckled

Him: Awww. He's not here right now is he. ?,he's probably out of the country making new deals.

I swallow the lump in my throat

Me: My brother..

Him: We'll just have to wait and see.

He said as he extended his hand to brush my hair out of my face

Me: Don't you dare put your filthy hands on me.

I yelled out at him ignoring the pain that shot through my head at that instant.

I quickly looked the other side,my neck hurting at the move

I breathed out heavily,I was tired.

Him: Filthy ? You forgetting how they could

also get you to moan ,how they comforted you when your 'loving' man was no where to be seen.

Me: You (breathing out) are nothing. You aren't going to get nothing.from.torturing me

I said,almost unable to finish the sentence

My body was giving out and I hated feeling weak and vulnerable

He chuckled.

Him: But I am going to have fun with you though .Now here are my rules. No fighting me. No trying to escape. That's all,Obey them and you will remain safe. I won't have to hurt you as long as you listen to me,understood ?

He must have took my silence for an answer.

Him: Sleep,'Princess' is it ? You are going to need the energy because you and I are going to have alot of fun together.

[11/09, 08:22] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 45



Woken up with cold water thrown on my body, I don't know how I jumped out of bed. I coughed out violently, trying to wipe the water from my face with my hands so that I could see clearly.

There stood Lu with now an empty bucket that was once filled with water

Him: Wake up Princess, time for you to do something while we wait around for your knight in shining armour.

He said, laughing at the end

I rubbed my wrists, they had on these red lines

I so wanted to cry now but I wasn't going to give him the satisfaction of seeing me weak.

Him: There's a bathroom over there, maybe you can take another shower since this one wasn't proper ?

Him: I can scrub your back ?

He offered as he smirked at me

Getting up and heading towards the so called bathroom without saying a word

I was shivering because of the wet clothes that stuck to my body like a second skin

I didn't want to take them off, what if he comes in while I'm naked ? What if there was a camera somewhere here ? I know I was being delusion but I wasn't at ease.

So instead of taking my chances. I changed into clean clothing which consisted of a shirt that ended just above my knees, brushed my teeth and just wiped there and there and exited the room.

Him: Don't you look even more sexier in my clothes

He looked me up and down

Him: Lets go, You are going to have to make Lunch for my guys and I

He said as he dragged me out of the room to what I suppose was a kitchen after we passed by a group of guys who looked like to be undressing me with their eyes

I just wanted to crawl into a corner and hide.

I cooked what he wanted me to cook and went to serve them before he told me to fill in their glasses.

I was going to put the tray with the glasses on the table and leave it but then saw a phone laying there

I was going to be smooth about

Putting the tray down,I knocked over one of the glasses that where filled with brandy making the contents spill out

Lu: Yi shit le uye'nzayo !

I jumped startled when he yelled at me

I apologised and quickly went to take a napkin and went to wipe it off,taking the phone with the

napkin. It wasn't wet

I went to put the napkin at the kitchen

Me: Can I go to the bathroom ?

He snorted

Him: Hamba.

I Quickly rushed to the bathroom ,closing the door behind me.

Taking the phone with my trembling hands,I unlocked it and thanked god when it didn't need a password.

Who am I going to call ?

Pressing in my brothers number ,I was about to call him before the door was abruptly opened

Knocking me down since I was standing behind it

Looking up at a furious Lu,I swallowed the lump in my throat

I was going to take my chances anyway,quickly

pressing the call button before the phone was snatched out from my hand and back slapped

Him: What the fuck do you think you doing !  
Didn't I warn you to not try any funny Shit ?

He asked,shouting at the top of his lungs

He slapped me once again before he kicked my side making me topple over

He continued to repeatedly hit me and I couldn't stand up for myself,all I did was cry.

"You piece of shit, I'm going to kill you"

I heard a familiar voice say

Turning to see My brother snarling at Lu.

It wasn't a couple of seconds when I heard a couple of gun shots fired,coming on the other side.

Before I could ponder on it

I was looking at Oz who attacked Lu with a big right overhand punch.

Lu stepped out of range but before he could bring his hands up to defend himself, Oz drove his shoulder into Lu's chest slamming him into the wall where he started landing solid punches into his gut, he had started coughing blood

Me: Oz !

I tried stopping him.

I wanted to get up and hold him back, I didn't want his hands getting dirty

I was in so much pain , I lifted myself up supporting with the wall . I was back to my feet but it wasn't for long as I collapsed and everything was black.

.....

Waking up, I couldn't really feel my body. I was numb

Hearing the beeping sounds of machine's, I was once again at a hospital.

Better than being held hostage by L-

Lu ? Where is he ? Am I safe ?

Abruptly getting up hurting myself in the process but I didn't care at the moment,A hand held me in place

" Alona,Alona you're safe . I'm here"

Turning to see Oz,I sighed in relief. He brought me in for a hug as I sobbed on his chest .

Him: You're safe.

He kept telling me. After I had calmed down abit I asked him to tell me what happened.

Him: Reece and I worked together to find you,The Smart watch that he gave you provides live locational information,and the device has the capability to transmit alert to the person who is connected to it if you wander off from any pre-designated safe zone,It also has a panic button that gives you the ability to call out for help,You didn't know though I'm sure he was being sneaky about it .Anyway Reece got an

alert on your where about then he called me,figured out something.

Me: Thank you

Him: Don't mention it,it's my responsibility to protect you.

Me: W-what happened to him ?

I wait for him to answer before I saw his jaw twitch.

Him: Beat the shit out of him,I swear I was going to kill him with my own bare hands! But then I had to attend you since you blacked out so I rushed you to the hospital and Reece took care of him after he worked on the guys that were there

[11/09, 08:25] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 46

Reece came for an afternoon visit the following day,He brought me some sweet stuff and all.



I just wanted to melt right then and there but I wouldn't give him the satisfaction of winning me over and forget what he did.

Akakayi gqibi le yakhe no Thenjiswa and right now I was confronting him.

Reece: I know I shouldn't have done what I did with her I'm s-

Me: Was it a one time thing ?

I asked looking straight ahead but turned to look at him when he didn't answer me

His face void of motion making it hard for me to know what he is thinking about to say. But I think this time around I knew very well ,It wasn't a first time and right now he didn't know how to tell me

Me: How long has has been going on ?

Him: It doesn't matter

Me: It doesn't matter when you have been sleeping with some girl on the same bed that

you force me to sleep in at night. ? Do you know how disgusting that sounds ? Phind benes' bindi soza kum uyazi uba once I turn my back you go to her ?,was it even only her ? Going away for a couple of days and then not bother to tell me,Only you know if you're not booking a room at a hotel to be with her.

Him: I'm not

I chuckled

Me: Guess I'll never know, then you got the nerve to bring me a gift,that wristwatch.to install some device on it

Him: It was for safety reasons.

Me: And to ease your insecurities ! What if this was turned the other way around,If I was the one who was sleeping with some guy,If I was the one to go wherever I wanted to without letting you know,If I were the one to install a device to know about your whereabouts,to invade your privacy ? Wouldn't you have hurt

me ?

Him: No. You cheated and I forgave you

Me: Easily. And I wondered why but now I know i know,you knew you were doing the same on the side,only worse. When you found out it somehow eased your Conscious.

Him: That's not true ,Alona.

He tried touching my hand but I moved it away from his reach.

Him: I love you. You are the one I want.We matter.I am sorry for the pain that I caused you and us.

I knew if I forgave him easily and just forget about it,he was going to do it again and again

Me: I need a break.

Him: From ?

Me: You. From you and everything that comes with.I'm tired of everything,everything that I've

been through because of you. I never asked for it and I didn't know being with you comes with so many p-

Him: You breaking up with me ?

Taking in a deep breath

Me: Please leave.

Him: Alona.

Me: No. Reece I just need you to stay away.

Him: Bu-

Me: Go.

Him: Okay.

That okay wasn't the kind that said I'm okay with your decision but the one that said do whatever and I'll see.

He got up and left.

I wiped the tear that fell down from my eye.

I had to do this.

Taking a break from him was the best thing to do now. That can guide me from where to go from here without the distraction and hurt that comes with talking to him

.....

Pretty much the whole week passed by

I was slowly but surely recovering, now from home.

I was catching up on my school work and I was doing pretty well, I was dedicated to it.

I hadn't seen nor talked to Reece since that day at the hospital and that didn't sit well with me but then I made my decision.

Saturday around 6 pm and I was out with my brother. Doing a little shopping because we had just recently noticed that we ran out of groceries. Typical us

After we did the shopping and took the bags to his car, we decided to go eat at spur because we

still were lazy to cook and we were tired.

We were walking inside the entrance when we saw Reece's brother Zane, heading out

He was Holding a very cute Little baby boy

Curly hair, his round full cheeks. Little pink cute pouty lips and these huge eyes

He was so small, I know I've used the word so much but he was really CUTE.

I cooed at the baby as I walked to them, greeted Zane before my attention was focused on the baby, Tracing his baby hair with the tip of my finger.

He opened up his tiny arms for me to take.

Me: Can I ?

I asked for permission from Zane

Him: Sure.

I didn't care that he was on his way out right now, I just wanted the baby

I gladly took him to my arms, cradling him

He fit perfectly and I didn't want to let go of him.

Oz: You shouldn't have given him to her . Now we gon stand here for probably an hour till sh-

Me: Your exaggerating

Zane chuckled

Him: I don't mind. We not in a rush.

Me: Great. Maybe we can sit together then

I said not waiting for his answer but went to sit at an empty table fit for three

I heard Oz mumble something like ' See ?,I told you '

I quickly sat down and stared at the baby.

Lightly pinching his red cheeks, they were soft. He smiled up at me showing me his toothless gums

Zane: Well that's a first.

Me: What ?

Zane: He doesn't really like people he's not familiar with ,first time seeing you and he likes you.

Me: Well that's because I'm likeable.

Zane: Mhh...

Me: What's his name

Him: Khayone.

I nod

A waitress came around and took our order.

Zane got himself a drink because he had already eaten.

I had ordered burger and fries with a smoothie for myself.

I was about to take a frie from my plate but Khayone beat me to it.

I watched his tiny hand holding it,bringing it to his mouth as he tried to chew.



Me : Is he yours ?

He nods

Me: How come I don't know about him

Zane: You never asked.

I roll my eyes at him.

Oz excused himself from the table as his phone rang.

I just stayed with Zane

Him: So..

He started, Looking up at him.

Him: When last did you see him.

Me: Who ?

He stared at me, waiting for me to catch on

Me: Maybe a week or so

I shrugged

Him: Aren't you going fix things ,haven't you forgiven him ?

Me: This is not only about him cheating on me. I've been through a lot because of him, being with him puts me in danger and I don't want that. I don't want to live in fear of his enemies coming after me.

Him: I think you were bound to be in danger with or without him in the picture. What he is, your brother is. .

I sighed

Me: But I think taking a break for him is the best option.

Him: Is that your way of breaking up with him?

Was it ?

Combing khayone's soft hair with my fingers, I kept quiet.

Him: You're turning him back Alona

Me: What do you mean ?

Him: He's been doing well trying to change for

you,I've seen improvement and now he's gonna go back to that same old Reece . Alona just give him a chance,Just bear with him. You've done it just hold on a little bit longer.

Me: He's the one who messed up,he needs to learn his lesson and k-

But before I could finish what I was saying,I saw My brother make his way back to the table.

Oz: That sauce must be great eh ? New van spur ?

He asked looking at my plate

Following his gaze to see what he was on about Khayone's baby vomit drizzled on my fries.

Me: I knew you weren't going to be sweet like you look, what did I expect though ? You have Reece and Zane's blood running through your veins. You're nasty,but still cute anyway.

I mumbled

I heard the guys chuckle

I wiped his tiny mouth with a napkin

[11/09, 08:29] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 47

I had made my decision,I was going to forgive Reece. I know I loved him that much to try put what happened behind us and carry on with a way forward.

After I came from church Sunday,I went back home before I took a cab to his house.

He opened up,ever in his boxers.

The way he looked good ngakhona I swear it broke my heart because its like what happened between us,the tension didn't bother nor affect him.

Bingase ndijike ndimnke ngo sendi lapha and go carry on with my life like he is doing because

it's clear that I was the only one who was miserable .

Me: Hey

I greeted him,It we just awkward.

He nod.

Me: I uh- um (clearing my throat) just came by to check up on you,but I I- see you're okay so I'll be on my way back.

I said ,bendi sifa zi ntloni ( I was dying of embarrassment )What was I doing here again? Because This person right here was not affected by my presence.

Turning to leave but was stopped by his hand that found it's way to my waist

He turned me around,pulling me inside and closing the door shut.

He pushed my back on it before his body was close to mine,he looked down at me for a moment before he put his lips on mine,his hand

fisting my hair

He kissed me hungrily.

The kiss said alot of unspoken words,he missed me and all he needed right now was me

I pulled away to catch my breath,I looked up at him

Him: I missed you

He said before he crashed his lips on mine once again.

He now had both my legs wrapped around his torso while his hands were just under my butt

Intimate position right there and we have never been like that.

Me: I missed you too

I said breathlessly

He buried his nose on the crook of my neck,taking me in

Him: Then why didn't you come

Me: You the one who was supposed to do that not me

Him: I was giving you your personal space, what you wanted

Me: Just because I say I want something doesn't really mean I want it, I just wanted you to fight me.

He chuckles.

Him: Now I know

He said as he had his finger on my the top of my dress ,peeking inside it at my bra

He bit his lower lip. I swat his hand away and remove myself from him and the position I was in.

I was thirsty.

Heading towards his kitchen, I pour myself a glass of water and sat down

He watched my every move.

Me: Yinto ?

Him: Ngakhe ulinge Princess uthethe nam kanjalo.

He said his face always void of emotion.

Him: So you came here to check up on me only ?

I shrug

Me: What else were you expecting ?

Him: Maybe to hear you say you forgive me for what I did,it could actually put me at peace with myself.

I sighed and released my breath.

Me: I've already forgiven you Reece.

Him: Really ?

I nod

Him: You not holding any grudge ?

I shook my head

He smiled at me



Me: Just so you know if you do it again I'll take special shooting lessons and I'll kill you.

He chuckled, raising his hand up in surrender

Him: I think I'm rubbing off on you.

He smirked.

Me: No you not .

Him: Okay then I'd like to rub on you right now, you look yummy in that tight ass fitting dress.

He said biting his lower lip

Covering my face with both my hands, I think my cheeks had turned a darker shade of red

I heard him laugh at me, Oh how I missed that sound.

He catches his breath before he told me that he wanted to show me something.

Picking me up bridal style, he took me upstairs. To his room.

Opening the door and came into view his room that was now redecorated /renovated.

It looked great to a point where I was even afraid to look nor touch anything because it felt like it would break or I would ruin it.

He had on new furniture,even the bed was new

Him: So what do you think ?

Turning to look at him

Me: It's..Wow. Have no words for it.

I said my mouth agape,amazed by the beauty.

Him: No Other girl is ever allowed here beside you. I mean it.

He whispered to my ear.

I just nod,not wanting to say anything.

He hugged me from behind,bringing me close up to him to feel his warmth.

I snuggled up to him even more.

His phone vibrated on his pocket he answered it.

Waiting for him

Him: Zane is by the door.

Me: Is he with Khayone ?

He looked at me his eyebrows turned up in confusion

Him: How do you know him ?

Me: I was with Oz the other day and we met up with them at spur.

I said hurried away to

Opened the door.

Seeing the little guy,he also saw me and he squealed excitedly doing that sharp baby scream that almost hurt your ears.

I quickly took him.

Sitting down and staring at him adorably. I kissed both his cheeks

Lightly tickling his sides so that I could hear him giggle.

Zane: So you guys finally talked it out hu ?

I heard him ask

Reece: Yeah,and we were now in the middle of trying out our new bed ,until you disturbed us

He said sitting beside me, his hand rubbing the small of my back.

I Shrugged him offl

Me: Susi phaza'misa

Him: Yo !,theni ngathi uzan' thathel indawo sani ?

He asked tickling the baby

Zane: Dude we need to talk.

Reece: About ?

Zane: Givo,You know he's been arrested and we need a replacement,have anyone in mind ?

Reece: I'm n-

Before he could finish,he looked at me as I got up to go wherever so that I could give them privacy .

Reece: Uyaphi ?

Me: To your room

He looked at me arching his eyebrow

Reece: Hlala phantsi Alona.( sit down)

Me: But I wan-

Reece: Alona.

Sitting down.

I was forced to listen to their gang dealings. It wasn't pretty nice if you ask me.

[11/09, 08:31] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 48

The was a knock at the door and Zane went to open ,in came a couple of guys and - Thenjiswa.

I bit the inside of my cheek keeping myself from

snorting.

They all greeted

She flashed Reece some look before she glared at me

I just simply ignored her and continued to play with Khayone's baby hair as he was peacefully sleeping.

Me: Should I put him in the bedroom or you on your way out ?

I asked looking at Zane

Him: Put him to bed,please ?

I nod as I got up and made my way upstairs when I heard Thenjiswa mumble something like "Acting like the perfect girlfriend when you can't even give it to him"

When I came back,I sat down next to Reece as he snuggled me up close

Thenjiswa: We are discussing business,Why is

she here ?

She asked spitting venom

Reece: You in no position to be asking me shit.

Thenjiswa: But I'm in the position to be on top of you hu ?

She asked looking at me before smirking at me as I looked at her , unbelievable.

Her: What ? It ain't no secret that when you can't give it to him he comes to me.

She pointing to herself with her fake manicured fingered

She continued to push my buttons.

Her: What did he expect from a high school girl anyway .

I was so fed up with her,I got up and went to her as she also stood up

It happened in slow motion. My fist made connection with her overly glossed mouth

making her stumble and fall on her ass

I glared at her, feeling my anger rise within me

Her: You punched me

She screamed as she put her fake manicured hand over her bloody lip

Me: Yeah I did, I will do it again if you don't shut your cock sucking STD infected mouth .

She got up and before I knew it she slapped me

It stung but I had no time to nurse it as I jumped on her knocking her back to the ground

If anybody asked me What got me to fight her, I won't answer.

The way I felt right now I was ready to beat her ass

As my body straddled her I pounded my fist on her face, I heard her scream once again and tried to claw my face but I pushed her hands away



And began swinging punches. I didn't know where this surge of energy came from but all I knew was that I was pissed. Pissed for the way my life has been turned upside down in the last week.

I continued to pound my fist on her now bruised face till I felt my body being lifted up as two strong arms wrapped around my arms holding them down my sides

Me: GET OFF ME!,I'M NOT DONE !

Him: You are done Alona calm down,this isn't you

I heard Reece firmly say

Sure it wasn't.

Her: You better calm down that psychotic whore of a girlfriend of yours,she broke my lip ?

Me: You're lucky that's the only thing I broke,believe me I could have done much more worse,like unplastering your fake saggy boobs

I said as I tried getting to her

Reece: ALONA!

Her: What the hell did you ever see in her

Reece ?,She is crazy and a slut !

Me: Take one to know one,I've never opened up my legs for anyone. I have more self worth than you.

Turning on my heels,I walked over where my things were and took them before making my way out.

I was feeling numb and emotionless when I reached my house and I was glad when I didn't see my brother anywhere,I just wanted to be alone now

Going to my room for a quick refreshing bath to remove any traces of her smell on me

I had wrapped a towel around my body as I stared myself on the mirror

I stood there trying to digest what had happened. The person back there wasn't me, what happened back there ? All I knew was that I saw red when she started running her mouth.

Whatever happened back there set free something that was inside me

I had worn my sleep wear after I lotioned and was about to take a nap when my phone started vibrating

I picked it up and it was Reece telling me he was outside.

I wore my sleepers and headed out.

He was leaning on his car, I stood in front of him

He was silent for a moment. I before he spoke.

Him: What happened back there, Tsk Tsk . I don't want to ever see you behaving like that, ever. Umamele Alona ?.

Me: I'm done letting people walk all over me, I'm

no ones doormat. And I'm going to stand up for myself, starting with you and your whores

I said folding my arms on my chest

I'm done with people taking advantage of me

He gave me his usual sinister smirk.

Him: Princess! You don't know how fucking sexy you looked punching her. I didn't know you had it in you but so you know if you ever try something like that to me I'll fucken m-

Me: You'll what. ?

I challenged

I urged him to continue as he stopped mid sentence .

He didn't answer me ,I looked up at his brown calculating eyes . His face stoic.

Him: Fucken' stop with your Attitude.

I smiled sweetly at him, Taking a step closer to him. I lift my hand up cupping his

cheek, Reaching up and placing a kiss on his lips.

Taking my hand off his cheek, I brought it back and slapped him as hard as I could

[11/09, 08:33] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 49

Reece stood there stung. His face was still to the side after the slap and after a few seconds he looked at me

He had his hand firmly clasped around my arm as he brought me close to him so he could whisper in my ear

Him: That slap , a free pass but next time be prepared for the consequences.

He said each word so slow and the slower he said it the more he was putting pressure to my arm, getting near and near in disarming me.

"Let go of her"

I heard My brother's voice say behind, he was in

his car and the car window rolled down.

Reece looked at him.

He let go of my arm, quickly rubbing it as it was sore

I swear his hand was made of iron.

I watched him as he got in his car and drove off

I headed inside and quickly went up the stairs with the means of avoiding my brother.

"Alona"

There goes my plan.

Turning slowly I went to him, sitting down on the couch.

Him: Kuqhubeka ntoni ? (What is happening)

Swallowing the lump in

Him: He hit you ?

I shook my head

It seems like I lost my voice

Him: Then what happened to your cheek ?

Me: I got in a fight.

He snorted

Him: Got in a fight again ? Kuthen' ingathi izobasis' qhelo lento yakho Alona. Ubu kade ungekho nje Alona, slowly but surely you're changing for better or worse. Ever since you met him you haven't been the same, things haven't been the same Alona. ( Why do you make out this fighting thing to be your normal ?, you weren't like this Alona, slowly but surely you're changing for better or worse. Ever since you met him you haven't been the same, things haven't been the same Alona)

He said running his hand on his face, he was tired.

Him: Are you happy ? Does he make you happy ?

Him: Alona, please talk to me. I won't judge.

Me: There is nothing to talk about,we just had a misunderstanding.

He gritted his teeth.

Him: I don't want to lose my little sister.

Me: You not losing me Oz

I said snuggling up to his side,resting my head on his side while I wrapped my arms on his torso.

Him: But you are losing yourself Alona

Was I ?

.....

Friday evening.

I hated being the one who always had to go to his house when we had a fight or something

But in this case I really didn't mind because I was the one who was wrong.



I shouldn't have raised my hand at him.

I went to his house and found him sweating his ass off in his Gym.

I just stood there and watched how s-

REECE's POINT OF VIEW.

My fists pounded on the leather bag. The sweat from my forehead ran down my face but I just blinked it away.

The way She pissed me off on purpose made me see red.

The horrible things I was picturing in my head would scare anyone if they were to read my mind. Pain, torture and any possible punishment for what she did the night before.

Did she really think she could do whatever the fuck she wanted. Did she forget that I can kill in

an instant without remorse ? Just like I was thought by my father.

Is she that fuckin stupid that she thinks she can push me to my limit..the breaking point ?

Or she's doing it because she knows she's got some sort of power over me. One touch and I'd forget that I was pissed.

She's my fucking addiction which I hate to admit,Everything about her drives me insane. Her looks,body,temper,sarcasm then her innocence .

She was here

I took off the boxing gloves and headed towards her

I watched as she Swallowed the lump in her throat

She was scared, she should be. But I wasn't going to hurt her, I've put her through so much and she doesn't deserve it.

I smirked at her

Him: Princess

I stood in front of her, brushing her hair out of her face.

She flinched.

Me: Reece.

She said almost stuttering.

Her: Look I'm really sorry f-

Me: Shhh

I said putting my finger on her pink plump lips, removing it before I leaned forward and pecked her lips.

I put my hand under her tank top, running my finger on her bra line.

Her: Reece.

She tried stopping me.

Nah -ah. I wasn't going to let go this time around. She got to get used to meh touching her intimately.

Me: Keep saying my name like that and you'll be spread out on my bed with my face In-between your legs

I smirked as I looked at her shocked expression,the things she did.

She's so fucken cute for her own good.

Me: I want to do my last warm up and I want you to help me

He smirked

Me: How. ?

Take off your shirt,I don't want it to get wet with my sweat.

I said

Me: Is that an excuse to see my(pause)..

breasts ?

I shrugged

Me: I don't need any excuses to see your body,I could make you strip them right here and then.

She rolled her huge eyes at my statement.

She swiftly took it off and I watched her as I bit my lower lip checking her out

She's sexy

Him: Lie on your back

I said as I motioned at the gym mat

Her: Why ?

Him: Just do it

She did as She was told,laying on Her back straight and her small hands balled on her side

I went to stand by her feet

Him: Bend your knees and spread your legs

Me: What kind of work out is this ?

She asked confused

Me: Just a warm up

I said dropping to my knees between her legs, I leaned forward and placed my hands on either side of her head keeping her from any chance of escape.

I was so close that I could feel our warmth

I was going to do push ups right over her and right between her legs

I'm one naughty fucker hu ?

I kept doing push ups

I grinned at her hot cheeks and her nervous breaths

I stopped moving and hovered over her, I could feel her erratic beating heart.

Me: I still can't get over the fact that you fucken raised you hand at me yesterday.

I said reminding her I haven't forgotten

Me: That's why I'm here to apolog-

I didn't let her finish .

I firmly pressed my lower half on hers . I heard her wince as she shut her eyes close.

Let me forget about it and enjoy this moment.

Pressing my lips against hers possessively ,I slipped my tongue inside her sweet little mouth,tasting each and every corner

I dropped my lips to the top of her left breast never removing my eyes from her

Me: They are lovely

Kissing softly right above her bra

Me: And I'm going to worship these girls

I kissed her right breast

I heard her moan as I sucked her skin hard leaving my mark still at the edge above her bra.

It was killing me not to have her.

I slipped my tongue just under her bra

I heard her moan once again, throwing her head back and tangling her fingers in my thick hair

Her: Reece

She said softly with her eyes closed

My aroused d\*\*k hit the side of her thigh

I moved my hand holding her waist down to her ass

" Reece " she whispered out of breath.

Me: Don't be scared

I leaned over her and kissed her cheek

Me: I won't go any further, Do you trust me?

I kissed her nose, face trying to calm her nerves

She nods

I smirked and quickly kissed her once again.

Pushing her legs apart and settled my body between them



I cupped one of her breasts in my hand and gently applied pressure to it as my other hand lightly trailed down her stomach and slid it inside to touch her part

Moaning from the light pressure I was applying

Her uneven breaths and whimpers filled the silence

My own breath a little heavier as I held myself up with one forearm ,I leaned over as much as possible

My bare chest brushed her heaving breasts still covered with her bra,I wasn't going to take it off

My hand hadn't left the spot in between her legs as I continued to massage it

Her: Stop

I chuckled as her hips raised to meet my hand anyway

She continued to shove my shoulders to get off her but still lifted her hips,she didn't know what

she really wanted

My eyes briefly stared at her face that was slightly sweaty.

I smirked, pleased at myself for getting her this far, defying she is.

This being her very first orgasm all courtesy of my talented fingers

I watched as she closed her eyes, sighing when my hand slid away from the once most untouched part of her body

Me: How do you feel, princess. ?

Her: sleepy

She said, A weak smile lifting on her now swollen lips

I chuckled

I pressed my lips against her in a soft and brief kiss, Still wearing a drowsy smile while her breathing became more relaxed and my hand

rested on her hip

She squinted her eyes as if she was seeing the light again for the first time in hours.

I was glad when she didn't freak out that she was laying under my body with only her undergarments on

Him: You might have to wear my boxers as seeing I made you ruin your panties.

Red flooded at her cheeks,I smirked as she was wet for me .

[11/09, 08:35] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 50

I woke up later and I was under the covers of his bed.

Taking my phone in my hand,I check the time while I also noticed a few missed calls.

2 missed from my Brother and the other 3 from Romeo.

I first called my brother and he answered almost immediately

Him: Where are you ?

Me: I am uh-

Reece. ?

Him: Andikho se ndlini ,But if wena use ndlini,I'm out on a trip and I'm not coming back till - I don't know. But I want you to pack a few of your clothes tomorrow morning and go stay with mom. Just till I get back,I don't want to leave you on your own considering what happened last time. Will you be fine ?

I nod ,Remembering he can't see me.

Me: I'll be fine.

Him: Okay. I'll transfer you money on your bank account.

I grinned

Me: I love you.

He chuckled

Him: I'm sure you do, I got to go. Call me when you need something.

Me: Will do.

I said before I hung up.

I was about to get up from bed when Reece's hand wrapped around my waist in a firm grip, bringing me so close to snuggle on his side.

I felt so small compared to him.

He had his eyes closed but trailing wet kisses from the crook of my neck to my shoulder.

Me: Reece.

He opened his eyes lazily

Me: I need to get home.

Him: But your brother ain't coming back.

Me: So ?

Him: You'll be on your own and bored.

Me:

Him: I want you to stay with me and I'll take you back tomorrow.

I shook my head.

Me: You know you'll leave me here alone in the middle of the night.

Him: I won't.

Him: Okay I'll drag you with.

Me: Putting whose life in danger ?

Pecking my cheek.

Him: Okay. You're not going anywhere and I won't go anywhere.

Me: Let go of me I want to freshen up and grab a bite

I said,escaping his grip I was almost inside the bathroom when I felt him wrap his hands on my waist.

I rolled my eyes.

Me: Give a girl a break.

Him: No can do, Princess.

I went to brush my teeth while he stood behind me.

He rested his chin on the crook of my neck.

Him: You're beautiful.

He said, making blushing at his comment.

Him: And short.

He said ruining the moment.

He knew how much that statement always got to me.

Me: Your dick is short.

I blurt out.

He fake gasped.

I smirked at him.

Him: Did yo- ,I'll show you short.

He said scooping me to his arms as he walked out of the bathroom.

He layed me down on the bed

He was kissing my cheek and trailing small kisses down my neck

I was resting my hands on his chest while his were resting on the small of my back

He was pressed up so close to my body, his elbows supporting his weight

I could feel his erect member close to my spot

He began rubbing himself against me while he crashed his lips to mine

"Open your legs"

He said in between the kiss

I opened them to accommodate him

His body easily settled in between my legs ,He was still rocking his body over me and I couldn't help the moans that were escaping my lips.



His hand was moving on the side of my waist  
Breaking away from the kiss,I let him take off  
my clothes

Leaving me in my underwears

He slipped his hand on my back,unclipping my  
bra

He was about to remove it,when I called out to  
him.

I was nervous,No guy has ever seen me fully  
naked

I was starting to freak out

Kissing the corner of my lips

Him: Just relax.

Letting him take my bra off then the underwear

I just wanted to curl my body and hide.

Don't get me wrong,I'm not saying there were  
faults with it or that I was embarrassed.

It's just that I wasn't used to this

I watched his eyes trailing up and down over my body

I watched as he bit his lower lip

Him: Damn ! I think I might want you to stay naked all day long in the house with me

Me: Shut.up

I mumbled to him

He let out a chuckle

Him: I love you

I gulp nervously, Nodding my head.

Placing his lips on mine again,our lips moving in sync

Rubbing on me again

I could feel the warmth of my body shoot up

His hand Now moving on the side of my breast massaging it

How he could get me to moan out his name when the real action hadn't even started,beats me.

I don't know when his clothes came off ,Well I was in the moment so i couldn't possibly notice I loved the way he caressed my skin,making me feel warm and tingly.

Looking at his brown eyes that had seemed to turn a little bit darker

He smirked at me,loving the way I was reacting, my body was reacting to him.

Seeing him remove his boxers,his member came into view. It was fully erect and it was huge

I gasped loudly when I saw it,almost wanting to cower away

Looking at Reece,giving me his usual smirk

He chuckled

I thought he was going to make me wait longer, but I screamed out in pain as I felt him slam into me without even a warning

He caught me off guard

I could feel my tears slowly falling down, well I wasn't expecting this much pain.

He didn't move but he stayed inside me

Him: Are you okay. ?

Quickly trying to snap out of the state I was in, avoiding the throbbing pain

I nod.

I didn't want to let him down.

He seemed hesitant to continue at first but after a reassurance from me, he started to slowly thrust into me

Him: You're so tight.

That's because you're too big .

But that I didn't say.

I continued to endure,letting him move in rhythm as he kept thrusting deeper and deeper.

My moaning seemed out of control. It probably was exciting him more and more to hear me cry out and moan his name,because the more I did the faster and harder he thrust into me.

.....

Waking up the following day with a abdominal pain reminding me of last night's events

I had slept curled up,away from Reece

I was currently mad at him for not going easy on me

Trying to get up so that I could take a warm bath

I'm quick to fall back

I felt numb somehow

Taking out all my strength,I snail walk to the bathroom

Turning the water to fill in,wasting no time on stripping out of his shirt that I slept in

Then my underwear,where I noticed a few spots of blood

One thing I know is that I had already gone through my periods this month.

It was long before I got out of the tub and wrapped a towel around me after I lotioned

Getting out , I see Reece sitting at the end of the bed with only his boxers on

He comes towards me,wrapping his arm around my waist and kissing my cheek

Him: Good morning

What was good about ?,brushing him off me. I was walking to the closet when he pulled me back,looking up at him frowning

Him: What did I do Alona ?

I shook my head

Me: Nothing

I said back Horsley

Him: You were crying.

He said matter of fact

Him: Look if I hurt you yesterday night, I'm sorry.

I didn't want to make him feel bad

Me: I'm okay

Him: Then what's with the long face ?

Me: It hurts and I -

Him: Course it was supposed to hurt, after. It's Normal

Me: Normal to bleed twice after you lost your virginity ?

He sighs

Him: I can make it better then

He smirks at me

Me: How ?

Brushing my collar bone with the tip of his  
finger,it trails down to the towel I had wrapped

Tugging at it about to remove it

I swat his hand away and go take my bag  
,taking out my under garments

Going to the bathroom for privacy when Reece's  
hand clasps around my arm

Looking down at me

Him: Why can't you wear them right in front of  
me ?,I've seen your sexy body yesterday night ,I  
know your every part. That tiny birth mark on  
the side of your thigh,Perky breasts and that -  
little sweet pumpkin ah.

He grins at me

Damn ,I think my cheeks turned a darker shade  
of red

Me: Well,I-I'm not comfortable.

Him: I don't care



Me: Reece.

Him: Just get dressed Alona

He said, his face void of emotion

He was being serious right now.

Dropping the towel off

I start getting dressed

He was looking at me not even blinking, his eyes roaming freely examining my every part

If only he knew.

Me: Happy ?

Sarcasm.

Him: Very, Just so you know, I hate it when you hide from me.

Ignoring him, I finish off everything before asking him to take me home.

On our way, he suggested that we eat breakfast at McDonalds

Well I had no appetite but I knew he was going to put up a fight if I refused

Ndiphele ndizi Cenga then after we were done he drops me off home before he drove off again.

Oz ebengekho so I was all alone with my thoughts

I locked up the house and went to take a nap.

[11/09, 08:37] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 51

I woke up afternoon that day from my ringing phone It was Reece supposedly checking on me

Him: Were you sleeping ?

Me: Yeah, but I was going to wake up anyway

Him: Must have done a pretty good job then last night if you still tired.

I swear he had a smug look on.

Me: And sore.

Him: Maybe if w-

Me: I need a warm bath maybe then I'll be better and I need to hang up right now. I'm running out of time I still need to pack my clothes.

Him: Pack your clothes ? ..

Me: I'm going to live with mom till Oz gets back,he suggested it since he's conceded

Him: Mhh.. I'll be there in a minute then,I can drive you.

Me: Really appreciate it. Thank you

I said as I hung up and went to the bathroom and waited for the water to be at a suitable temperature to soothe my muscles after last night.

After I was done with bathing and everything.

I changed into my Maroon Lace shorts and it's

matching vest like cropped top. Tied my hair into a neat yet messy bun on top of my head and wore my Sandals

I took my duffel bag and started stuffing my stuff in.

When I was done with everything, Reece hadn't arrived yet so I decided to call him and ask his where about. He replied saying he's been waiting outside

I found him inside his car, the chair stretched out in a laying position.

He was so relaxed.

Me: You could have went inside and helped me pack ,then I would have been done long ago.

Him: We (pointing himself then I) both know that wouldn't have happened.

He said as he got out of the car and took my bags from me to put in his boot. He opened the door to the passenger side for me to get in

before he made his way to the drivers.

Me: Enlighten me.

Him: I would have taken you right there and then on your brothers couch.

He smirks

I playfully punch him on his arm,which ended up with me lightly hurting myself.

I swear Reece's was made of steel.

Him: Imagine the smug look I would have on next time I'm in the house and he starts with his shit and I'd blurt out that I fucked his younger sister on his couch,his house,broad daylight.

I glared at him as he chuckled,finding what he just said funny.

Me: Just please drive before I get mad.

Him: You always take everything serious,princess.

He notices my flat tone.

Me: Look whose talking.

I mumbled.

Him: Thetha ndikuve Alona.

I shook my head,telling him I wasn't saying a thing.

He snorted,before he started the ignition and drove off.

We kept making small talks here and there until he got to the street and he parked outside the gate so that it be easier for me to carry the bags inside.

I got off the car and went to the now oped booth to retrieve my bag when I noticed a black duffel bag.

Curiosity,a disease that I'm suffering from.

I unzipped it,peeking inside.

Stacks of white powder,wrapped up tightly in what looked like a tape and a- ,wait a minute.

Cocaine.

I froze on the spot as I stared at it.

Never in my life have I seen so many drugs  
,Never even seen a half pill that people usually  
smoke that I usually hear they get it for R25 or  
so. But this here,I should have fainted.

Him: What's taking you so long..

He trailed off when he saw what I was looking  
at.

His jaw twitched as he abruptly pushed me to  
the side,quickly finding balance because I'm  
sure I would have fallen ass first.

He quickly zips it up and stuff it in a place I  
didn't know existed in the booth.

Him: You should fucken learn to stay in your  
lane,stop snooping around .

Me: I have every right to know what's going on  
because frankly it could affect me. You  
shouldn't be having that in your car,do you know

what could have happened ? do you Know  
what could have happened to me if you got  
caught ?,

Him: Didn't get caught,Still here talking to me so  
yiyeke Alona.

Me: Reece do y-

Him: Ndithe yiyeke Alona !

He said,raising his voice. I swallowed the lump  
in my throat,taking my bag and turning on my  
heel to head inside without throwing a glance  
over him

I got inside the house and found the door open,I  
thought mom was inside,which was unusual by  
the way because she doesn't really have off day  
during the week. But instead of Mom  
inside,there was my cousin sister whom I don't  
really get along with if I might add.

Sprawled out on the couch,eating from a bag of  
chips while typing furiously on her phone.



When did she get here ?

I cleared my throat to get her attention.

She was startled that there was another presence in the house since she didn't even see nor hear me coming in ,she turned to look at me

Almost rolling her eyes.

Her: Intombi yo' lahleko.

Me: Molo Melissa

Her: Awuna Sisi ?

She was 3 years older than me.

I've done my part,I'm not in the mood to entertain her shit. So I'll be going to my room.

I was halfway through when she spoke up

Her: I hope you don't mind,your mom said I could use your room while I'm here,since ubu ngekho.

I bit the inside of my cheek to keep myself from lashing out.

I shrugged nonchalantly.

Me: I'll take my brothers room then.

I said turning around to get inside my 'New room ' which smelled strongly of my brother but I didn't mind . I'll just change his bedding,I'm sure you all know why

either than that it was clean.

I put my bags on the other side,I'll sort them out later because for now I just wanted something to eat since the only meal I had was breakfast in the morning.

I went to the kitchen and tried to block out some unwanted memories .

It was kinda messy in here,since I had nothing to do

I decided to clean around a bit after I grabbed something to bite,I had nothing better to do and the was no way I was going to be sitting with Melissa couse I'm sure I'll end up clawing her

face off.

I ate my noodles in a comfortable silence  
,engulfed in my thoughts.

I was thinking about yesterday night,Sighing  
dreamily.

It was really great but it sure hurt alot,Its my  
luck that I don't need stiches because it sure  
felt like he teared me open. Damn him and he  
di-. Wait a minute. Protection. We didn't use it  
did we ? I make a mess when I start choking on  
my food but I don't care as I jump out of my  
chair starting to pace around.

I was scared shitless. I was in the middle of  
snatching my hair off,tears at the brim of my  
eyes taking in nervous breaths that weren't  
helping.

I didn't know what to do,Letting them tears roll  
down my cheeks. I was really scared

What if s-, I don't have time for what ifs right

now.

I need to get a pill,any pill to reverse all of this. I can get it by the pharmacy,garage but I don't think they'll give it to me,nor Romeo if I called him,I know he'd be willing to help me out but we need an adult supervision

I can't call my mom also she'll kill me

Reece - No. Maybe -

Quickly rushing out of the kitchen to the lounge. I stood in front of her

Her: Yinto wena ? Ulilela nto.

Wiping my face with the back of my hand,I try to calm down. Which was impossible right now.

I told her the story and she waisted no time in going to the pharmacy and got the pill for me.

I drank it right there and then and tried calming down,I thanked her before I took my phone and decided to call Reece and told him.

[11/09, 08:38] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 51  
continued

After I called Reece over and told him the story .

Him: Fuck!,how can I be so careless.

I heard him say,frustration masking his features

Me: But it is sorted now because I took after pill

Him: Still Alona it might not work,you can't just take whatever pill you find at the pharmacy or garage and think problem solved,you need a doctor s- (stopping midway as something comes into mind) . Masambe

He says dragging me behind with my wrist

Me: Where to ?

Him: To my doctor,just to make sure that you really not pregnant Alona.

He snaps at me.

I let him almost drag me like to his car. Where

he drove in full speed and within minutes we arrived at our destination.

We didn't wait for long ,it was Reece after all so I was immediately taken into examination.

After we were done

Dr: I'm going to give you an Emergency contraceptive pill. Split dose of two tablets that you will have to take 12 hours apart.

I nod in understanding.

Dr: The ECP may disrupt next menstrual period by couple of days,It'll make menstruation heavier and more painful but it all shall end within 24 hours,nothing you should worry about though.

I swallow nervously

Dr: Abdominal pain,headache ,dizziness,breast tenderness,nausea are some of the side effects usually do not occur for more than few days after treatment,but they'll resolve within the 24

hour . Other e-

Reece: I think she heard enough,she'll be fine.

He says stopping her from continuing any further. They have a mini staring contest,Why do I feel like they know each other in a way. ? The way they were looking at each other right now one would swear.x

We passed by the market so that I could grab something to eat so that I can take the pill before I asked him to drive me home so I could rest a bit.

Me: So you and her..

Him: Akhonto yenz' kayo Alona.

Me: Never said there were.

Him: She's in my past.

Me: The way you two were looking at each though says s-

Him: I'm really not in the mood for an

argument,I told you Akho nto yenze'kayo Alona .

Turning my head to look outside the window.

He places his hand on top of mine that was placed on my lap,rubbing it with his thumb

He intertwine our fingers before bringing it to his lips to leave a kiss.

Him: Trust me.

I just nod

.....

The week passed by,with me going to school then come back and study. Sometimes i'd make time to see Reece.

But I was really focused on school,less time I spent with friends

Resulting in me going to a party Friday night.

Romeo and Melissa practically forced me because apparently I needed to go out more

They chose a outfit for me which consisted of



black high waist leather short,black thin see through crop top. Dressing with a black denim jacket and my vans.

I tied my hair into a bun and I let Melissa do my face,applying a light make up.

All in all I didn't recognise the person in the mirror,I looked really great.

.....

People rushed in and out of the place carrying those mysterious red cups that always had you wonder what was inside.

I watched my surroundings attentively

It didn't take us long to blend with the crowd. I had promised myself that I wasn't going to drink alcohol but sadly I couldn't hold on to my word.

I first drank a cider and then I ended up mixing whatever because I felt like the cider wasn't putting me in my place

A few hours later we decided to go home with Melissa, Romeo has disappeared in the crowd and I knew we weren't going to find him.

"Hey" I heard someone say behind me, turning around quickly to find Thami looking at me

(The guy I met at the beach when I was with Romeo)

Him: Good to see you again.

He said engulfing me in a hug.

Me: Same here.

I slurred out, taking the cup he had and gulping the contents.

I threw it aside and dragged him to the dance floor.

We danced about half an hour before I got tired and I went to the bar, got myself two shots of vodka. Downed them in one go.

Thami: Slow down there, you might regret it in

the morning.

He ordered a bottle of water for me, Poured it into a glass and gave it to me to drink.

I downed it and closed my eyes shut to regain my vision.

Me: I need- to gwt home.

Him: Are you driving there ?

Me: Nah, My cousin sister over and I ate going to get a cab.

Him: I doubt that you both can in the state you in. Let me drive you.

Me: You aren't going to get anything, Awu'zusi Carr (a) .

I blurt out, He chuckled.

When we got home after Thami dropped us off, Melissa thought indlela eya e room (ini) inde so she slept on the couch.

While I balanced with the wall to my room,I got there. Switching the light on and yepie.

Reece.

[11/09, 08:39] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 52

I don't why I was so shocked, I ended up screaming my lungs out.

I think the alcohol had something to do with it.

Melissa came tumbling in my room

Her: Yintoni- na Alona.

She just looked at me then at Reece who had the calmest expression ever,Ebesi bukele nje sisa nqwakuza.

Her: I wouldn't mind coming to my room to find ( burp) a sexy piece of work like this.

She slurred and made her way out.

Awkward.

Closing the door .

Why did i close it ?,It'll make it hard for me run out when Reece decides to strangle me.

Oh well.

Me: I love you.

First thing I blurted out. Before I put my bag on the side.

Stripping out of my clothes and wearing a baggy shirt over.

Seems like I have sobered up already.

I brushed my teeth, before I quickly went to tuck myself in bed and let sleep overtake.

Reece will deal with me tomorrow morning.

Feeling movement on my side,I feel the mattress dip then a heavy body on top of me

Him: Open your fucking eyes Alona.

Great,he's pissed

Instead of doing what he said,I looked on the other side.

Him: This isn't the time to be defying me,so I suggest you do as I say.

He hissed.

Turning my face I open my eyes to see Reece's deep brown eyes boring into mine .

Me: Get off me Reece.

My voice was raspy and dry ,My head felt like it will explode and my stomach was turning. And if he didn't get off me right now,I was going to throw up on him.

He glared at me.

Him:Make me.

Feeling bile rise up from my throat,I push him with the little strength I have and scurried up and ran to the bathroom as quickly as I could to

spew my contents.

After I was done,My shaky hand manages to flush,Sitting on the floor I lean my trembling body against the wall.

Throwing up after I spent the night drinking is worst,ever.

Him: You feel like shit don't you.

He was in front of me.

I couldn't respond so I just nodded my head. Feeling his cold fingers grip my cheeks in a firm grip,I winced.

Him: Let this be the last time you ever touch alcohol.

He gritted through his teeth then pushed my face away before standing over me.

I was just exhausted,I am not drinking ever again.

I felt his arm wrap around my waist,lifting my

body off the floor.

Me: What are you doing ?

He tightens his grip ignoring me

Still in his hold he walks over to the shower and stops to reach the nozzle, turning it on with his free hand. He swings me in the shower head which was running very cold water.

I screamed out as my body shook from the coldness

Me: What the heck is wrong with you. ?

My teeth chattered

Him: Nothing, Just Helping you wake up.

Me: I might get a cold.

Him: Does it look like I give a fuck. ?

I watch him leave the bathroom slamming the door behind him.

When I got off the bathroom ,done with everything.



I got out and found Reece sitting at the edge of the bed,typing away on his phone while Melissa stood a couple of feet away from him,wrapped up in a thin layer of towel only.

She was trying to get Reece's attention but failing miserably.

I smirked inwardly,Feeling proud of him.

Lets face it, not many guys can do it.

Her: I made you breakfast.

Since when do you make me breakfast and be polite enough to come tell me about it . I wondered .

.....

Going to school Monday morning,After staying in bed for the whole weekend because I was feeling sick from the hangover,I was better.

I was with Romeo sitting on our usual spot and I was eating an apple

Me: Why am the only one who almost died from the hangover. ?

He chuckles

Him: Kaloku thina singaba ba'qhelwe Bu tywala sisela nje asisa nxili. (Alcohol is used to us we just drink but never get drunk)

Me: And where did you disappear to ?

Him: Remember the guys who we once met at the beach when Reece showed up unexpectedly and picked you up. ?..Lubabalo

I try to think for a moment before the dark skinned guy pops in my mind

I nod

Him: Met up with him oko endi valele e koneni. (Met up with him, he cornered me).. Then there was Thami,I gave him your..number.

Me: Why would you do that. ?

I screech

Him: Kaloku bendi sazenza mhleand I wanted him to get away and not hang around when Lubabalo and I are eating each other's face.

Me: With my number ?

Him: Yeah ,you'll just reject him if awufuni uncokola naye (reject him if you don't want to talk him) Anyway I spent the weekend at his house and I came back yesterday morning.

I gasped

Me: Romeo! What did your sister say. ?

He was currently left with his older sister because both his mom and dad went to work related event,their all the time thing.

No wonder Romeo is like this,he was a rebel.

Looking for attention in all the wrong places,something he wants from his parents but can't really get.

He always pretends that it doesn't affect him but deep down I know it did .

Him: Uthe esithi myawu ndabe ndisithi myawu mna kqala. You lucky that your mom wasn't around, and your cousin is cool enough to go with you so you have no one to breath down your neck.

Me: Reece. He was in my room when I arrived. He was so pissed especially in the morning when I woke up with a hangover, he just likes to make a big deal out of everything.

Him: And la short temper yakhe I need(a) u Doctor one 50 years of experience  
I laughed at that

NOT EDITED.

[11/09, 08:40] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 53

Reece called me over Friday evening, He was lazy to pick me up and that he had a couple of friends over that he didn't trust enough to leave

behind. I had to do the walking.

I was listening music on my death beat screen phone. Music blasting through the headphones but that didn't stop me from hearing the screeching tyres of a car coming to a halt behind

But before I could react,I was dragged inside to the backseat

It was dark so I couldn't make out who was who inside

I wanted to scream out but a hand clasped firmly on my mouth prevented me from doing so.

I tried prying it off but it was impossible,this sure was a guy.

The strength.

" Stay calm,this is not a kidnapping. I just want you to do something for me"

A gruff,raspy voice said.

It sure was a man

I stopped trashing around for a moment. He removed his hand from my mouth and I could breath properly again.

Him: Good girl

He said, patting my head like I was some kind of a puppy

Him: Tell your man that I'm coming for him.

But before I could answer, I was pushed out of the car it drove off

Picking myself from the ground, I breathed in and out to calm my rapid beating heart.

I made my way towards Reece's house

They were having a brie

I just blend in with them, What happened outside a few minutes ago I'll deal with it later because I know for sure if I tell Reece now. Uzoba leli ya lifun' ubotshelwa igeza and I wasn't about to

ruin their moment.

I was sitting with some girls in Reece's kitchen, they were drinking and I also had a bottle of savannah on me

I hadn't drank it yet, I was tempted to. Just to forget what happened

Oh well.

Bringing the tip of the bottle to my mouth, I was about to take a sip but Reece's voice stopped me

" I'm sure you holding that ( points bottle) for someone "

He said, arching his thick pierced eyebrow.

I quickly put it down like it burned me or something.

I swallow nervously.

Him: Iza'pha.

I got off the chair and walked to him.

He opened the fridge,taking out a juice,a glass then drags me with him to sit with and the other guys.

He sat down and pulled me to his lap.

.....

Later on

Reece's friends had left and it was just him and I around except his brother who was blacked out on one of the rooms upstairs.

I was combing his soft curls,damn I think his hair was way better,well taken care of than mine.

Me: Reece.

He turned to look at me,pecking the corner of my lips

Him: Mhh ?

Me: I- need to tell you something.



He takes a swig from the glass that had whiskey in

Him: What ?

Clearing my throat.

Me: When I was on my way here, something happened.

He looks at me furrowing his eyebrows up in confusion.

Him: What ?

Me: Some guys.

Stopping midway as he was about to take a sip from the glass.

Catching his attention, he was ready to fight whoever

Him: What guys ? What did they do. ? Did they hurt you . I swear I'll fuc

Me: No they really didn't hurt me bu-

Him: What do you mean they 'really'( making the

word more clearer) didn't hurt you. ? What did they do !

Me: Pushed me out of the car, but I'm fine.

I quickly said

Him: Ubufun' uqal uphuk' intamo uze uqal'uqonde that you not fine na Alona ?( you wanted your neck to break and then you realize that you not fine Alona)

I shook my head no

Him: Did you see their shit faces ?

I shook my head once again

Me: It was dark in the car and their voices weren't familiar, I don't think I know them /him. They just wanted me to ' deliver ' a message. That he's coming for - you.

He chuckles so low.

Him: Cimba zi Clever ne .

He said getting up.

He went upstairs and I followed closely.

He got to his office, switching on his laptop

With a few clicks and a little bit of waiting.

The screen showed video clips, he clicked on a specific one ..it showed me being grabbed into a car

It really wasn't clear because it all happened a few houses away

You prolly couldn't make out any faces.

He stopped it right when the car was passing by his gate in full speed and zoomed in the picture, showing the number plate in blur.

He smirked.

Him: They better get to me first because if I do get them first I'll sure skin them alive.

I swallowed nervously, scared of the threat.

He took his phone and called out the number plate to the person on the other side.

When he was done,he turned to me

Him: I'll drive you home.

When we got to his car,he started the ignition and drove in speed.

I swear Reece drove like a maniac.

I started putting on the seat belt because I might need it. But that seemed not to help also

I was scared shitless

Me: Reece.

I called out to him but he simply ignored me,his jaw twitching.. He was pissed.

Me: Can you please slow down.

He ignored me once again.

I stopped talking to him.

Him: We're being followed.

Oh ,that's why he's been speeding up.

Wait a minute,WE'RE BEING FOLLOWED !

My heart beat faster for the second time today,what's stopping me from getting a heart attack .

Why is he so calm ?,Reece's expressions never ceased to amaze me.

In most scenarios, people in our state would freak out .

Suddenly he stopped the car. The streets were awfully quiet for a Friday. Only then I noticed that we were in a unfamiliar street.

He must have changed directions.

I watched him take his gun from the side of the chair.

He aimed at the the car that had seemed to also on the way of stopping.

A guy got out and Reece waisted no time in shooting the guy ,the bullet went through his shoulder,making him loose his gun as he groaned in pain.

Reece got hold of him before he could flee.

Punching him repeatedly ,the guy was almost unconscious.

Him: Who's the Arsehole that sent you ?

He screamed at the guy, who was losing consciousness by the time.

The guy was shaken up, he said some things

Reece dragged him to the car he was driving, throwing him in on the side passenger seat,Before he took his phone.

Him: I need you to pick up some guy in (saying address) on the side of the road. Black GTI . I messed him up enough for him to not drive himself back wherever hell hole he came from, take him to his boss.

He hung up and put his phone in his back pocket.

Him: Tell shit head of your boss that I'll be seeing him later .

With that said,He got in his car and drove pff  
Reece was something else.

using the same person who was sent to kill  
him back where he was sent just to get a  
message through.

When he dropped me off,I went inside to find  
Mom with Melissa in the kitchen cooking.

Checking the time to my watch 7 pm,  
30 minutes past my curfew

Melissa: Hope you won't come back to me once  
again for me to get you a morning after pill njebi  
ngathi awuka layeki nje.

Yeses.

[11/09, 08:40] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 54

How will my mother ever look at me now?,She'll  
never look at me the same any more,I'm no

longer her little girl right ?

I was so embarrassed, Scared and ashamed.

My mother didn't need to know that.

Mom: Uthi kutheni ? (What did you say ?)

She asks, stopping whatever she was doing to look at me

Turning to glare at Melissa who had a smug look on

Her: Khange uthi mand' ngayi thethi.u Alona when she came home Sunday, she asked me to get her morning after pill, supposedly she had unprotected sex.

Mom turned to look at me.

Disappointment.

I didn't know what to do right now. I was just hurt .

I went to my room leaving my mom in her shocked state.



I didn't want to hear what she thought,I wasn't strong enough to face her right now.

I closed and locked the door to my brothers room as I threw myself on the bed.

I'm good as dead.

I took my phone and called Reece. It rang for a few seconds unanswered and when he picked up..

Him: I can't talk to you right now,I'm in the middle of (I heard gun shot in the background) something ,I'll call you later.

He said while he hung up on me

.....

Following day.

I was currently confronting Melissa.

Me: Did you really have to tell mom about it ?

She shrugged nonchalantly

Her: What. ? You didn't want mommy to know that her little girl ain't so little any more ?

Me: And you all did it because Reece didn't even look at your whorish ass, You mad that he wouldn't even give you the time of the day

Her: Sure about that ?

She asked folding her arms to her chest, arching her eye penciled eyebrow up.

I chuckled

Me: So this really is about him, you should be ashamed of yourself.

Her: Look whose talking, Drinking a pill to reverse an unwanted pregnancy, that's like 'Abortion' (air quotes)

Me: It wasn't an abortion.

Her: Tell that to your mom, let her know what kind of a daughter she raised.

Shit.

Me: Look Just because you had issues, and a not so great relationship with that drunkard of your mother doesn't mean you should go around causing problem for m-

Her: Don't involve my mother in this.

Me: Hit a nerve there ah ?, you find pleasure in hurting , playing mind games with others ? Just to fill the space your mo-

Her: SHUT UP !

She yelled at me.

Me: Maybe you should seek professional help bef-

She didn't let me finish , she back slapped me

And I think I bit my lip through it and now I was bleeding. I wasn't going to fight her.

I'm going to be the bigger person right now.

I walked out and to my room to get myself

cleaned up in the bathroom then I went to the kitchen for some ice to put on my cheek that was throbbing.

" We need to talk "

Yeses.

There's too much drama in this house.

Turning to look at mom who had on a serious look .

I nod before going to sit down and wait for her.

Her: I don't know how many times I have talked to you about this, The consequences of having ..

She trailed off, not being comfortable of talking about it

Me: Sex.

I finish off for her.

Her: Alona, you still a child.

She grits her teeth at me.

Me: A teenager.

Her: Doesn't give you the right to do as you please !

I keep quiet.

Her: you don't talk back to me, Su cimba umdala ngenxa yezi zinto uze nzayo Alona.(Don't think you're an elder because of the things that you are capable of doing)

Me: Xolo Mama. (Sorry Mom)

Her: What you did. Alona you're a nurse's daughter for god sake ! Akhonto ndinga kufundisanga yona ,You should know how to be responsible !

I nod

Her: Why are you being like this ?, Alona you should focus on your school work,you're doing matrix. Focus on your studies then everything comes last,Why uzi' xakekisa,Why ufun uzixakekisa ? Yinto le uyi funayo ndinga kuniki

yona ? Akhonto singa kwenzeli yona Alona,we want what's best for you. (Focus on your studies then everything comes last,Why are you complicating your life ?,What is it that you want that I don't give you ,there's nothing that we don't do for you Alona ) Xa Uzo kwenza into ezi kude kunawe Alona,acting irresponsible! Do you know what will happen ? You'll end up pregnant Alona ! And do you know what I'm going to do ? I'll send you to go leave with the one responsible for it,Andizu hlala no mfazi omdala mna !, as long as you living under my room,you're still a child and you are going to listen to what I say. I'm putting you in a needle. As long as you go around ukhangel' into ongayaziyo kula madoda , every month you are going to get a needle.

Okay.

Me: Maybe if I had a father then I wouldn't be going around , If I had my father's attention then I sure wouldn't be going around looking for

'men's' attention in all the wrong ways.

With that said,I went out.

I was just taking a walk to clear my mind and I ended up going to the park where I found Enzo and his friends,smoking weed.

Putting our differences aside,I smoked with them.

NOT EDITED.

[11/09, 08:40] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 55

When I got home from the park later.

I was so high,everything had been forgotten for the moment. I was in the moment,in the mood and I wanted no one to ruin.

This feeling was nice.

I went to lock myself in my room,passing by the dining room where Mom and Melissa were

sitting.

I heard mom call out for me, It was either to finish the 'talk' we had or to give me a lecture on how it is past my curfew. Melissa started smelling the air before furrowing her eye penciled eyebrows and asking " What is that smell" but before mom could dwell on it, Her phone started ringing, it was the hospital and they needed a extra hand.

Like she could have refused.

I threw myself on my bed after I changed out of the previous clothes I was wearing.

I was listening to music, my eyes closed.

I was so relaxed.

When my phone started to vibrate indicating an incoming call, I ignored it.

I didn't care who ever it was. Bendi ngafun' uphaza nyiswa .( I didn't want to be disturbed)

I was slowly but surely falling asleep, the air



coming from my side of the window was refreshing.

Did I leave the window open, surely mom would have closed it for me. But th- wait.

Opening my eyes, which is something I struggled to do

I saw a figure standing right in front of my sleeping foam, I must have been really out of it to not notice someone getting in.

Reece.

Me: What if mom was home and found you here. ?

Him: I saw her leave when I was parked outside waiting for you

He lay down, holding me from behind.

Him: How are you. ?

Me: I'm fine.

Him: I can tell

Me: Shouldn't have asked then.

Him: Ubu tshaya phi ?

I tensed up for a moment.

Me: What ?

I stuttered.

Digging his nails in my flesh so that he could turn me to face him.

Him: Don't make me repeat myself Alona, I know you know what I'm talking about, don't act confused.

I wasn't going to answer him, I mean what would I tell him

I was smoking weed at the park with my Ex boyfriend and his friends. ? Yeah.

Him: Uqale ni utshaya ngo Alona. (When did you start to smoke )

It was no use in keeping quiet, that could get him angry

Me: Today.

Him: Why.

Me: ..

Him: Why Alona. ?

I shrugged.

Me: I was frustrated, had an argument with mom.

You refused to talk to me when I called so I went for a walk and I ended up at the park. Got to.. Some guys and they were smoking so..

Him: Jonga andi zuba ne ntsaiza enza obu bhanxa bakho,Fighting,Alcohol,Now smoking wh- (Look I'm not going to have a girlfriend who does what you do,Fighting,Alcohol,Now smoking wh- )

Me: Xa zenzwa nguwe zi right ne ? ( But It's okay when you do them ? )

He fisted my hair in his hand and pulled me to

him

Him: Jonga sund' nyela yeva. (Look don't bullshit me )

I tried prying his hand of but it was almost Impossible

Him: Kuthen ingath uya' qhela lento yophendu lana nam Alona .And jonga andizu xakwa nguwe mna ndizo'ske ndiku nyathele unye qha mamele ? ( Why are you getting used to responding to me with attitude ,And look you aren't going to out power me I'll just kick your Ass,Do you hear me ?)

I quickly nod. He let go of me

Breathing out a shaky breath.

Him: Yeka le shit uye nzayo yeva.( You need to stop whatever shit you're doing)

I nod

Him: Ndathetha Alona.(I'm talking to you Alona)

Me: Ndikumamele. (I'm listening )

Him: If I find you doing any of that stuff, you'll get it, uzo ndazu njeb' undi provok(a).(You going to know me well if you keep provoking me)

He threaten .

I know right now he was being serious, I wasn't ready to die young.

Him: You go freshen up.

I got up and went to the bathroom.

I waited for the bath water to be at the right temperature and then I stripped out of my clothes and got in

When I was done. I got dressed in light clothing because I was feeling hot, dehydrated,dizzy and nauseas so I didn't need alot of clothing, I was going to pass out.

Reece was sitting on the other side of the bed. I got inside the covers and lay in a fetal position, I was shaking.

He cuddled me from behind and I leaned in more to his warmth.

Me: I feel sick.

Him: No shit, Your body ain't used to what you took, You'll wake up a little bit better tomorrow.

.....

Waking up the following day , I had a headache and I was super hungry.

I didn't want to face any one so I rather stay locked up in my room.

Reece had left around midnight, he didn't sleep over.

I went to wash my face and brushed my teeth before fixing my bed.

Getting on top of it again and watched cartoons.

I was halfway through when I heard a knock on my door, I wasn't going to open.

The person on the other side continued to linger

on

"Alona"

That voice, My brother.

I went to open for him. I know he already knows what's been brewing here while he was away.

I hugged him never the less.

Him: I'm not happy with you right now, Babe.

Me: I know, and I'm sorry.

Him: Where did you get such behaviour . I did tell you that you losing your self Alona. Smoking weed and acting like a rebel,being irresponsible? That's not you. What are you going to do next ?.. What's happening to you ? Ever since you met him,it's like you becoming another version of him a-

Me: Don't put the blame on him,this is all my doing ,my decisions and he's not behind them nor pressurizing me to do what I do.

He kept quiet for a minute. Staring at me for I cut him short and for talking back.

Me: I'm sorry.

I said biting my lower lip, stopping it from quivering.

Him: Promise me. Promise me Alona that you'll stop whatever you doing. Promise me that you'll stop exploring. I mean maybe that's what this is, you're a teenage girl and you doing what everyone is doing to blend in . But you done, Couse you know its not good for you right ?

I nod.

Me: I promise.

I said getting up and snuggling on his side.

Him: Good. Now you are going to apologise to mom right ?

I nod.

Him: Look what I got you.



He handed me a present- like bag ,taking it to my hand. I open it and inside was a perfume set.

It smelled great without even checking it out.

I grinned at him

Me: Thank you.

I got up and went to put it in my dresser drawe, passing by the mirror.

I take a look at my self.

This wasn't me, when did I become like this.

When did my life get so complicated ? Was me Falling for a Gang Leader has to do with what's happening to me or is this just a phase/ stage that each and every other teenager goes through ? I guess.

[11/09, 17:12] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 55

When I got home from the park later.

I was so high, everything had been forgotten for

the moment. I was in the moment, in the mood and I wanted no one to ruin.

This feeling was nice.

I went to lock myself in my room, passing by the dining room where Mom and Melissa were sitting.

I heard mom call out for me, it was either to finish the 'talk' we had or to give me a lecture on how it is past my curfew. Melissa started smelling the air before furrowing her eye penciled eyebrows and asking "What is that smell" but before mom could dwell on it, Her phone started ringing, it was the hospital and they needed an extra hand.

Like she could have refused.

I threw myself on my bed after I changed out of the previous clothes I was wearing.

I was listening to music, my eyes closed.

I was so relaxed.

When my phone started to vibrate indicating an incoming call,I ignored it.

I didn't care who ever it was. Bendi ngafun' uphaza nyiswa .( I didn't want to be disturbed)

I was slowly but surely falling asleep,the air coming from my side of the window was refreshing.

Did I leave the window open, surely mom would have closed it for me. But th- wait.

Opening my eyes,which is something I struggled to do

I saw a figure standing right in front of my sleeping foam ,I must have been really out of it to not notice someone getting in.

Reece.

Me: What if mom was home and found you here.  
?

Him: I saw her leave when I was parked outside waiting for you

He lay down, holding me from behind.

Him: How are you. ?

Me: I'm fine.

Him: I can tell

Me: Shouldn't have asked then.

Him: Ubu tshaya phi ?

I tensed up for a moment.

Me: What ?

I stuttered.

Digging his nails in my flesh so that he could turn me to face him.

Him: Don't make me repeat myself Alona, I know you know what I'm talking about, don't act confused.

I wasn't going to answer him, I mean what would I tell him

I was smoking weed at the park with my Ex

boyfriend and his friends. ? Yeah.

Him: Uqale ni utshaya ngo Alona. (When did you start to smoke )

It was no use in keeping quiet, that could get him angry

Me: Today.

Him: Why.

Me: ..

Him: Why Alona. ?

I shrugged.

Me: I was frustrated, had an argument with mom.

You refused to talk to me when I called so I went for a walk and I ended up at the park. Got to.. Some guys and they were smoking so..

Him: Jonga andi zuba ne ntsaiza enza obu bhanxa bakho, Fighting, Alcohol, Now smoking wh- (Look I'm not going to have a girlfriend who

does what you do, Fighting, Alcohol, Now smoking wh- )

Me: Xa zenzwa nguwe zi right ne ? ( But It's okay when you do them ? )

He fisted my hair in his hand and pulled me to him

Him: Jonga sund' nyela yeva. (Look don't bullshit me )

I tried prying his hand of but it was almost Impossible

Him: Kuthen ingath uya' qhela lento yophendu lana nam Alona .And jonga andizu xakwa nguwe mna ndizo'ske ndiku nyathele unye qha mamele ? ( Why are you getting used to responding to me with attitude ,And look you aren't going to out power me I'll just kick your Ass,Do you hear me ?)

I quickly nod. He let go of me  
Breathing out a shaky breath.

Him: Yeka le shit uye nzayo yeve.( You need to stop whatever shit you're doing)

I nod

Him: Ndathetha Alona.(I'm talking to you Alona)

Me: Ndikumamele. (I'm listening )

Him: If I find you doing any of that stuff, you'll get it, uzo ndazu njeb' undi provok(a).(You going to know me well if you keep provoking me)

He threaten .

I know right now he was being serious, I wasn't ready to die young.

Him: You go freshen up.

I got up and went to the bathroom.

I waited for the bath water to be at the right temperature and then I stripped out of my clothes and got in

When I was done. I got dressed in light clothing because I was feeling hot, dehydrated,dizzy and

nauseas so I didn't need alot of clothing, I was going to pass out.

Reece was sitting on the other side of the bed. I got inside the covers and lay in a fetal position, I was shaking.

He cuddled me from behind and I leaned in more to his warmth.

Me: I feel sick.

Him: No shit,Your body ain't used to what you took, You'll wake up a little bit better tomorrow.

.....

Waking up the following day , I had a headache and I was super hungry.

I didn't want to face any one so I rather stay locked up in my room.

Reece had left around midnight, he didn't sleep over.

I went to wash my face and brushed my teeth



before fixing my bed.

Getting on top of it again and watched cartoons.

I was halfway through when I heard a knock on my door,I wasn't going to open.

The person on the other side continued to linger on

"Alona"

That voice, My brother.

I went to open for him. I know he already knows what's been brewing here while he was away.

I hugged him never the less.

Him: I'm not happy with you right now, Babe.

Me: I know, and I'm sorry.

Him: Where did you get such behaviour . I did tell you that you losing your self Alona. Smoking weed and acting like a rebel,being irresponsible? That's not you. What are you going to do next ?.. What's happening to you ? Ever since you met

him,it's like you becoming another version of him a-

Me: Don't put the blame on him,this is all my doing ,my decisions and he's not behind them nor pressurizing me to do what I do.

He kept quiet for a minute. Staring at me for I cut him short and for talking back.

Me: I'm sorry.

I said biting my lower lip, stopping it from quivering.

Him: Promise me. Promise me Alona that you'll stop whatever you doing. Promise me that you'll stop exploring. I mean maybe that's what this is, you're a teenage girl and you doing what everyone is doing to blend in . But you done, Couse you know its not good for you right ?

I nod.

Me: I promise.

I said getting up and snuggling on his side.

Him: Good. Now you are going to apologise to mom right ?

I nod.

Him: Look what I got you.

He handed me a present- like bag ,taking it to my hand. I open it and inside was a perfume set.

It smelled great without even checking it out.

I grinned at him

Me: Thank you.

I got up and went to put it in my dresser drawe, passing by the mirror.

I take a look at my self.

This wasn't me, when did I become like this.

When did my life get so complicated ? Was me Falling for a Gang Leader has to do with what's happening to me or is this just a phase/ stage that each and every other teenager goes through ? I guess.

[11/09, 17:12] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 56

After I talked with my brother, I went into my mom's room, I found her getting ready for church.

Me: Ma ?

Her: Mhh

Me: I.. I'm sorry

Her: For ?

Me: For the way I have been acting lately, for being disrespectful. I know when you talk to me, you only mean well and

Her: I'm also sorry for the way I talked to you then, I shouldn't have reacted the way I did, I should have just sat down and tell you more about such things, I mean you were bound to grow up eventually and do each and every stuff..but I didn't expect it .. I know I haven't been there nor spending time with you, cause

I'm always at work. But just you know I care, and I love you, everything I do I do it for you and your brother.

Me: We know Mom and we appreciate it. Don't beat yourself about it cause we understand, and you doing it for a good cause.

Her: Aww my baby is growing up.

She cooed at me as she pinched my cheeks.

Me: Mom !

I swat her hands away. she laughed before bringing me in for a hug.

"So you kissed and made up"

Oz said as he came in.

I nod

Him: Good, I can't have my two favorite women cross with the other

He said brushing imaginary dust from his shoulders. Mom chuckled as she also hugged

Oz but he quickly brushed him off because he was supposedly too old for that.

Mom: Eshee. What is up with you two acting like grown ups

Oz: That's because we are mom.

Mom: Don't get smart with me, Ning libali nani finyiswa ndim imi finya igqib'ubuso bonke iyoqhina endlebeni njeba nicimba seni ba dala nje.

Me: Eww mom

Mom: Eww mom what ? ,I was the one changing your nappies with poor going up your back. I was the one who took care off you when you father d- ..

Oz: Mom, you gonna be late for church.

He stopped her from finishing, she clears her throat for a minute

Mom: I'm (checking time on wrist watch) an hour early, Maybe you two can go change so we

could go together.

She offered.

Oz started feigning sick. He had his arms wrapped around his waist and had a look on of someone in pain.

Him: I feel sick,It's like I'm going to vomit and my stomach has cramps.

He said,now bending over

Mom looked at him, her one eyebrow raised up while she folded her arms to her chest. She knew he was lying

Me: You were fine just a second ag-

Him: Shut up.

He grits through his teeth.

I stifle a laugh

Mom: I got those pink pills th-

Him: The ones that make you go to the bathroom every second ?,never ! I don't want

them.

He said standing up properly, forgetting his act.

Mom: Ah..seems like you no longer sick.

I watched as his eyes bulged out.

Him: I..um.. I think I'm gonna throw up.

He says with his hand on his mouth as he ran out.

I laughed so hard, clutching my side because it started to hurt.

Mom: You go get ready.

My laughter died down, Yeses I could have just ran out and pretend to go check on Oz.

Me: Uh Mom..I think -

Mom: What ? Your periods just started right at this moment and you stomach hurts ?

I nod.

Me: Uhh ,Yes that.



Mom: I was planning on to taking you out for lunch after the service but then,you can go lay down.

She got me.

Me: I think I'll just get ready,they are bearable.

Mom: Ha.a yeka.

I got out anyway and quickly went to my room to get ready.

.....

The following day.

We were going to get lunch with Romeo then go sit at our usual spot.

We were chatting and eating the same time.

"We rolling a joint ,Don't you want to inhale ?"

He asked , Smirking at me.

Enzo

Me: No thanks. You and I,Asizo tshomi so masi

ngaqhelani. Just because I was with you Saturday doesn't mean anything. So shoo shoo go back to wherever you came from

I watched his face fall, frowning. He turns to leave and I heard him mumble " Bitch"

Me: That's the same thing that got your friend to have a blue eye for the whole week. I'm sure you don't want it though your face is already messed up so I suggest you watch what you say to me.

I shouted back at him and watched as he left ..

Romeo: What was all that about ?

Romeo asked bringing my attention to him.

I told him what happened on Saturday, beginning to end.

Him: That's hectic, have you fixed things with your mom ?

I nod.

Him: That's better.

Me: Yeah.. Enough about me. Is that a hickey/Love bite ?

I asked pointing to his neck.

I swear he blushed.

Him: Lento uyi tshayayo Alona ayi hambisi selani nawe, ayiku' sebe nzeli yiyeke.

Him: So la no ntoroty (Melissa) uhamba nini ?

He said trying to avoid the oncoming topic.

.....

A couple of days later.

Oz and I were at his house.

We were currently sitting in the lounge when we heard someone on the door and he went to open.

I tried peeking to see who it was but it was

almost impossible with his tall frame.

Oz: What do you want ?

Him: You.

It was Reece.

Oz: You sound so fucken gay right now.

Him: Not while I'm with your sister.

Reece liked trouble.

Oz: You don't know how much I want to kill you right now

Oz gritted through his teeth while Reece Tsk(ed) at him,smirking

Him: You can't. You know you and I have unfinished business beside that, just think of your sister. What it would do to her if you killed me.

He said smirking,brushing past Oz's shoulder who has now tensed up. He was fuming and trying so hard not to slice Reece's head off

Reece just brought out the worst in someone, he knew just the right button to press to get you worked up, and he was finding pleasure in doing so .

I heard Oz mumble " Still don't know what my sister sees in you. " before slamming the door shut and coming to sit beside me.

Oz: Talk.

He hissed

Reece: Aren't you going to offer me a drink ?

Oz: I'm a couple of seconds away from taking my gun and shoot you in-between your eyes.

Reece: You know you wouldn't, I'm your best friend remember ?

Oz: Used to be

Him: You still hang out with me.

Oz: Because I like your company better

Him: Which makes us friends.

Oz: No we not. I hate you.

Him: No you don't, you love me.

Oz: Used to.

I cleared my throat

Me: Guys..I'm still here.

This was Awkward,Trust Reece to put you in such situations.

Me: ..And I think the appropriate word to use is 'like' not love (They glared at me) I mean it sounds really awkward right now.

They continued to glare at me, making me squirm under their gazes.

Me: I'm just gonna go to my room.

I said getting up.

Yeses

I was not needed here, I quickly got up and ran up to my room.

Being under the same roof with both of them.  
Damn just imagine.

[11/09, 17:13] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 57

When I woke up the following morning, I decided  
to make breakfast for Oz and I

Pancakes, bacon, sausage and a couple of eggs  
on the side

I was waiting for the sausage to fry then I'll be  
done when Oz entered the kitchen.

Holding me from behind while his head fell limp  
on my shoulder, he was sleeping on me

Him: It smells great in here.

Me: Yeah it'll be ready in 5.

Him: You the best

He said kissing my cheek and letting go of me  
and went to the fridge.

Taking out a milk carton, he drinks about half

the contents in one go

I glare at him

Him: What ?

Me: You such a pig.

He shrugs

Him: I'm really tired, into yobe ndithatha I glass ,  
then rinse it, inde.

Me: ..And you're tired because..

Him: Stayed up all night drinking with Reece,  
played beer pong and got a couple of shots

' couple' according to him, means too many that  
he lost count

Me: I thought you hated him

Him: Well.. I do. But - it's complicated.

He pauses for a moment.

Him: I'm hungry.

Me: I'm not your mom .



I hand him his plate as he sits down

Me: You should tone it down a bit on the alcohol.

Him: Tone it down ? I'll be hosting a little event here , surely you don't expect me not to drink and stay sober through out the whole thing.

Me: What event ?

Him: I've been organising a get together for Friday.

Me: You mean a party ?

Him: Sort of , just a few friends

Me: Sure a 'Few'

I said rolling my eyes at the word.

.....

I had spent the Thursday at my moms house. It was Friday the day of the party,I know I was not needed there oh and I wasn't going there to hang out with my brother's in crowd. I was going there because I live there.

I was done packing my stuff in my overnight bag and I was going to my moms room to tell her that I'm leaving.

I opened the door and found Melissa inside, mom was nowhere to be seen.

She was standing at a cabinet where mom usually keep her hospital things, Pills and all She immediately hid something to her behind.

Me: What are you doing here ?

She shrugged nonchalantly

Her: Came for some pills,for tomorrow morning..When I have a hangover ..your brothers parties are the shit and I'm planning on getting wasted

Me: Where's mom ?

Her: Double shift. (Looking at my bag) You going to your brothers house? Maybe we can go together since I'm headed there anyway

Me: No.

I declined her offer, I want nothing to do with her, she's nothing but a back stabber. I made my way out and to the cab which dropped me off.

There were a lot of cars parked at the driveway, not just any cars. They looked flashy and expensive.

I could spot a lot of people lingering around by the pool, it was still early but there were many of them.

What happened to 'Few' ? I'm pretty sure there were more coming.

I made my way inside and a couple of guys who were standing by the gate and they started to wolf whistle when I passed by.

"She's hot"

"Fresh" another guy said

I turned to look at them, smirking.

Guy: She's Oz's sister

Me: And I'm with Reece

Guy 1: We were just complementing,we swear we weren't flirting or any thing

He stuttered ,looking frightened.

Guy 2: Are you fucken kidding me ,do you know we could even lose our eyes just by glancing at her.

I left them there as their attention was now focused on being killed by my brother or Reece,at least it wasn't focused on my behind any more.

It was impossible to see my brother in the crowd so I went up the stairs to put my stuff in my room before going back to the kitchen to grab a few stuff to have my own party in my room, eating sweet stuff and watch a movie..which will be almost impossible with the music blaring out loud.

I took out what I wanted,which was a lot if

might add. But I wasn't going to finish them all  
I turned to get out of there when I bumped into  
someone making my stuff fall

"I'm sorry"

Said some guys voice

Me: It's partly also my fault,I wasn't looking

I said as I bent down to pick them up,he  
followed the move and was now helping me

Him:For someone with a work-out type of body  
,you sure do eat alot of sugar "

Me: What can I say,I have a sweet tooth

I got up and took the stuff from him.

Him: I'm Anele

He said showing me his hand to take, but both  
mine were occupied so I couldn't shake it

Him: Oh sorry.

He said now noticing it,Scratching his back

Awkwardly.

Him: So what's your name. ?

Me: I'm not telling you.

Him: Why.

Me: Because I don't want to.

I shrugged.

Him: I'll just call you pretty

I chuckle

Me: Thanks for helping me but I got to go

I said passing him before he could say something,dashing to my room

I was about to settle down when my phone started to ring,Reece he was outside.

I huffed in annoyance but went to him any way.

" I wanted to see you before I got inside"

He said when I got in his car,pecking me on the lips.

Me: Oz invited you ?

Him: Why wouldn't he ?

Me: I thought he hated your guts

Him: He doesn't ,any way he knows he can't party without me . We always party together

Me: Your friendship is complicated hu ?

He chuckles.

Him: It's packed in here

I nod

Him: And you aren't sitting with any of them, no alcohol either I'll f-

Me: I know I know (rolling my eyes) I was planning on staying locked up in my room anyway,watch a couple of movies and stuff myself with whatever.

Him: Can I join you ?, maybe we can also..

He trailed off as he pulled me on top of him in a straddling position..starting to kiss me while his

hands were under my shirt rubbing my waist .

He was about to take off my shirt but I stopped him,I know where this was going

Me: Not here

I said getting off him

Him: So now you determine the place,time and when

Me: No.What if someone -

Him: I get it ,I'll be heading inside

He said leaving me to lock his car.

I got off looking around he was nowhere to be seen, I locked the car and headed inside with his car keys.

.....

I had probably spent 3 or more hours locked up Alone in my room.

I wasn't following any of the movies I had tried watching and I couldn't concentrate and a



couple of people would occasionally try to open my bedroom door now and then and I think I know exactly what they wanted

Well my room wasn't a hotel where you can bring in any pick up and have sex with

I thank god that I wasn't downstairs blending in with the crowd,I would have come to my room later on and come across disturbing moments that could scar my mind forever.

Since I had nothing better to do,I decided to sleep but remembered that I had Reece's car keys and I don't want him coming to wake me up later on when he wanted to leave.

I had spent about 15 minutes looking for him but it seems like he vanished into thin air.

I saw the guys I threatened earlier on, I

I'm sure they were on the lookout for My brother or Reece since I also threatened to tell on them ,they were waiting to be pounced on

They told me they last saw him going upstairs.  
It was either he was going to the bathroom or  
ebeyo tipa.

I went up the stairs once again knocking in each  
every room, which some were occupied      you  
know

Lastly going to check in my brothers room  
where

I found Melissa.. On top of Reece

I ran out there

Bumping into Anele on my way out

" I wouldn't mind bumping into you each and  
every d- ..hey are you okay  ?"

Quickly clearing my throat and swallowing the  
lump, I wasn't going to cry

Me : I'm fine, I'll be fine

Him: It looks like you are about to cry though

I shook my head, I won't

Me: I just need fresh air.

Him: I was headed outside for a smoke anyway.

He says dragging me with, There were a lot of people around here so I doubt something will happen or there won't be any witnesses if something happens with this stranger

Me: Look if you want information about Reece, I'll gladly give it to you

I said as I sat down by the now empty pool with a few people lingering around

Him: Information about Reece.. ? What you on about ? That's my boss right there , there's nothing I don't know about him.

My mouth formed a small O

Me: I've never seen you around

Him: But I have seen you before..at the

warehouse. When he came with you to punish those two dumb heads who tried to force them- , I mean those dumb heads who hurt you

He said trying to avoid bringing the whole thing up

I snorted

Me: Funny how he wants no one to hurt me yet he does

Him: Uhhh what you on about..?

Me: I just caught him having s- ,you know what..never mind..

He nods.

Him: Alona.

He said like he ws trying my name on his tongue

Me: How do you know my name ?

Him: Warehouse, the boss

Me: Then why did you ask for my name when I bumped into you

Him: Rather you have me tell you that I know your name even though you don't know me ?, I didn't want to freak you out.

I spent a couple of hours talking about random stuff with Anele, he was cool to be with. Making me forget a little about Reece but when I woke up in the morning the following day, reality hit me in a wave. Yeer maarn !

Reece slept with my cousin sister.

[11/09, 17:14] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 58

REECE'S POV.

It was early afternoon when i finally woke up. Exhaustion had taken over since I went to bed

around four this morning.

Getting up I run my fingers through my messy hair as I yawn. Picking up my cell from the night stand I notice I have missed text messages and calls. None of them were from my princess.

Again why would she ? she was probably torn apart from what she witnessed yesterday night,she wanted nothing to do with me right now.

Actually I don't even know what really happened yesterday with that slut Maria ,Marie-Melody I don't know her name and I don't care. I just know she is her cousin and a wicked one at that

She tried her luck with me. But then again who am I ? I'm Reece Fucken' Cruz. Nothing can bring me down to submission,not even a double dose of the pills she used to spike my drink.

I admit,I almost lost it and passed out and let her have her way with me but I acted too fast

and her plan didn't work out.

Alona. She wasn't going to believe me, given the position she found us in

I would have run after her but I had no strength in me, I used all that little strength to get that bitch off me and went to my car

Calling my brother to pick me up after I blacked out on the steering wheel and now I wake up here.

My father would be so disappointed in me to know that I'm letting all these females mess with the way he groomed me, to be tough and feared.

And now to let my guard down in a place filled with some undercover enemies, then to be almost played by a female

Tsk Tsk.. What the fuck is happening to me I've never felt so weak, ever since I met her.

Slowly but surely I've been changing, it's a good

change but.. I don't like it . Especially for someone who is in the game.

My old man would really be disappointed.

Standing up I walk to the bathroom so I can do my business. I Rinse my mouth and shut off the water and walk over to the shower to fully awake.

I go under the water letting the water relax me but I know it really won't help, nothing can cool me down while she's mad at me.

A good thirty minutes pass by and I decide to shut off the water. Opening the shower door I grab my towel and dry myself and step out.

To have her mad at me always put me in a bad mood, not that I'm ever in a good mood but.. I just

She's so stubborn. I bet she already made up her mind without hearing me out.



But I don't blame her,If this was the other way around,If I found her in such position with another man. I'll hurt her bad

.....

I had decided to go see her

I saw Oz's car leaving as I parked mine on the driveway .

Him: Whatever you did, Fix it.

He shouted out after rolling down his window.

I ignored him as I went inside the house,It was pretty clean considering last night's events He must have hired people to tidy up.

I went up to her room,I was nervous

I knocked on her door, I heard shuffling on the other side before the door was opened and when she saw it was me, she quickly tried to shut it in my face but I easily out powered her . Pushing the door making her fall down on her side.

I got in locking the door behind and putting the key in my pocket

I looked down at her,I couldn't quite see her face and what emotion she had on because it was covered with her long hair

I got down and tried helping her up but she refused,her small hand on my chest to push me away

I stepped back.

She got back up on her feet.

Her: Get out.

I just looked at her. When she saw I had no means of doing so.

She screamed at me to get out,showing me that she was being serious. I wasn't going to go without defending myself

I tried to hold her hand but she brushed me away,her hands formed into fist started to move so quick on my chest as she hit me repeatedly. I

let her be and when she had enough she fisted my shirt in her hand putting her tear streaked face on my chest as she slid down to my feet  
I couldn't bear seeing her like this

I wrapped my arms around her and let her cry on me but it wasn't seconds when she trashed trying to get out of my hold but I was too strong instead I tightened my hold on her

Me: I'm sorry

I don't even know what I was apologizing for, but I hated seeing her like this

When she calmed down a bit, she was able to speak though she hiccuped and her voice was raspy

Her: How could you? You did it the first time and I forgave you, you doing it for the second time, worse with my cousin sister..

Me: I didn't sleep with her. I swear I didn't. You know I learned my lesson the last time, She -

she spiked my drink a-

Her: And you still have the audacity to lie to my face ,when I saw you two

Me: Alona please, I'd never do you like that again. Especially with someone close to you,family. I'd really wouldn't stoop that low. Princess please..

Her: You slept with her..

She said,more to her self still shocked.

Me: I didn't.please believe me.

She was quite for a moment, hoping she was thinking it through, hoping that at least she believed me. That she trusted me but I long broke her trust when I first cheated on her

Her : You don't deserve me. I don't deserve this, I don't think I can -..get past this.

Me: Don't give up on us.

She shook her head

Her : There's no us. Clearly you never took this relationship seriously. You don't take me serious. You keep hurting me and you know I'm going to forgive you.. Not this time , I'm done with you Reece. I've been holding on to you, stood by you. You're not worth it anymore,I'm done.

It hurt her saying it

Me: Alona ..just think it through, don't make these decisions yet. I didn't sleep with her, I swear I didn't. She drugged me but still she didn't get what she wanted,which was to sleep with me. I fought her with the little strength I had left. I th-

Her: Leave.

Me: Alon-

Her: Leave ! For just once, do something for me

.

She abruptly got up,furiously trying to open her

door handle. She headed towards her dresser table,blindly taking things and throwing them at me but I managed to dodge.

I raised my hands up in surrender,Taking the key from my jeans I open the door and get out.

I'll give her time.

I got in my car and drove off to the warehouse.

Whoever got in my way right now was really going to get it. I was in a killer prick mode.

[11/09, 17:14] [ +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 59

My life went on in the couple of days,weeks

Reece stayed away from me, I hadn't seen him since the day of our sort of break up and it was killing me but I think it was for the best .

I mostly spent my days at mom's house, even though it meant having to see Melissa every time. I wasn't going to abandon my because I

wanted to avoid her . I got some sort of comfort from mom

All she knew was that I was heartbroken buy some guy in my class, I couldn't really tell her how deep this was.

I was glad that I had someone to talk to, I didn't want to involve my brother in this. I didn't want to be the reason behind the complications of their dearly friendship.

Melissa had a certain behaviour and when I asked her about it and she said she was pregnant. I didn't believe her

I had went specially for her to the market to buy pregnancy test. Three of them.

I got home and found her sleeping in my room. I abruptly shook her causing her to fall ass first on the mat as she rolled over.

I threw the plastic at her. She didn't say

anything as she went to the bathroom and I followed her just to make sure.

Her: What happened to privacy ?

Me: Do you even know how to spell 'Privacy' ?,  
Just get in.

I glared at her, she went on in anyway

I read out the instructions to her.

She peed on all of them then we waited for a couple of minutes ,and I read through the information on the back of the packaging

I took the first stick in my trembling hand.

The control line on the left of the pregnancy test was visible, suggesting that the test result is valid . A pale purple line has also appeared on the right hand side (the test line) which clearly signifies that ..she was pregnant.

I took the second then the third pregnancy test and they all showed the same results.



My breath hitched in my throat, I sat down on the edge of the bed as I processed all of this.

What this means, What will happen to Reece and I.

Any ounce of happiness I thought we had left was gone. This changes everything.

I turned to look at her.

Me: I hate you.

I said my words venomous.

She shrugged.

Her: The feeling is mutual

Me: You don't even have a little bit of guilt of what you did.

Her: Just another life challenge for you, deal with it.

She said as she swayed her hips heading out.

I crawled up on my bed, laying in a fetal position.

I just wanted to sleep so I could forget all about this.

I took my phone on the night stand, I texted Reece letting him know of his now to be duty to be a father to Melissa's baby.

I'm so done with him

.....

I was with Romeo at school.

Him: So you just going to give up ? , and let la nontoroty (Melissa) known she's won and got what she wanted ,which was to break you guys up

Me: What should I do? Ndihlale ndi nyamezele uviswa kabu'hlungu ngu Reece ,ndibe ndine themba loba uzo tshintsha ? ( Stay with him and bear being hurt, hoping he will stop and change ?)

I shook my head.

Me: I'm not going to do that. Life goes on and mine will go on the way it used to before, I won't die. Reece can go to hell for all I care

Him: But friend. You not being fair to him, At least you could have listened to his side of the story.

I huffed

Me: I don't know what to believe anymore. I saw them in my brothers room that night, in his bed Melissa naked. She says she slept with him. He says he didn't but Now she's pregnant.

Him: Has Reece ever lied to you

I shook my head, No.

Me: He might be starting now just to save his ass.

Him: B-

Me: Let's just drop it.

I said and right then the bell rang and we parted

ways to go to class.

After school we decided to go to Mcdonalds,I really need a smoothie.

We sat at a table that had a view from outside, to people watch

While we waited for our order. I saw some chick passing by, she had a huge baby bump on and beside her was a guys who was carrying a few plastic bags ,probably a early baby shopping.

I swallowed the lump in my throat as I thought of Reece and Melissa..

Romeo must have seen my bothered look after I saw the couple

Him: Don't let it get to you ,you'll get through this.

I nod as i took his warm hand in mine.

Our order arrived a few minutes later and we sipped in them, While Romeo tried to ease the mood.

Later on I went home and found my brother lazing around .

I went up to my room to change out of my uniform before going back downstairs to start cooking dinner . I was done half and an hour later and I dished out for the both of us and took our plates with as I went to join him in the lounge

I handed him his plate before sitting down.

Him: Ndizoku galel' ityiwa ungaboli ( I'll pour salt so you won't rot)

Note: I DON'T EVEN KNOW WHAT THAT MEANS,OR IF I TRANSIATED IT RIGHT.

He was grinning

Me: You need to get yourself a wife, ndidikiwe nguwe mna

Him: As long as you and mom take good good care of me, forget it. Beside I'm still enjoying life and there's a long way to go.

Me : Sleeping with four pick up chicks in bed ?

He shrugs

Him: Bayazi zela.

Me: AIDS is spelled with four letters

Him: I never forget to use condoms. I have a huge basket up in my room filled with them.

Two packets under my mattress. 1 packet in my car Another four in my office. 3 singles in my wallet. I probably have 1 under this couch.

About two In the kitchen. In the g-

Me: Shut up. I've heard enough to scar my mind forever. You know what. ? I'm not even hungry anymore.

I said getting up as he burst out laughing

He quickly pulled me back to sit down next to him. He catches his breath

Him: I'm sorry then

He says Wiping an imaginary sweat from his

face

Me: Caba uxo zekile ne ? Ude ube pink ubuso ? Uzofa umncinci ngezi zinto uzenzayo. ( You find this funny ? Your face even turned pink. You'll die young if you don't stop the things you do)

I said as I continued to eat from my plate

.....

I was sleeping in my room when I got a call from Reece.

He knew if he called me earlier while I was awake I wouldn't answer. He waited till it was 3 am so that I can answer blindly with my sleep filled mind.

After deciding to answer cause I knew he wouldn't quit bugging me.

..

Him: I don't understand why you avoiding me when we could talk and try to fix this

Me: You lied to me. There's nothing to be fixed. How do we fix the part where you stuck your dick in my cousins huge hole and got her pregnant, how will you fix it ? by making her abort it ?

Him: I d-

Me: You not actually thinking of doing it are you ?

Him: I'm not even r-

Me: Reece I need you to stay the hell away from me .

I said politely as I could, I was tired of this.

I hang up on him, decided on blocking him on my cell wanting to stop any sort of contact with him.

He can go hang himself by his manhood and die for all I care.

[11/09, 17:14] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 60



## REECE'S POV

I Was parked a couple of houses away from Alona's moms house,instead of waiting for her,I was waiting for her Cousin sister

I was stood outside my car,my hands folded up to my chest.

I was going to do something i should have done long ago.

A muscle was ticking steadily in my cheek as I tried controlling my rage when I saw her approaching

She had on some skimpy dress and she saw my eyes on her she pulled the top down ,exposing her chest

Like those saggy tits could turn me on, they weren't Alona's plump round shaped ones,just thinking about them makes my dick twitch.

Her: Hey Reece.

She said,her voice high pitched, batting her eye lashes

Biz' ngathi yandazi eh. Tsk Tsk

Me: Maria.

Her: Its Melissa

Like I give a fuck

Me: Lets get to business

She said seductively as she trailed a finger from my chest and down to my belt. I took her hand and put it on her chest,shoving her lightly.

Me: The only business I can have with someone like you ,Is if I sell you cheap cheap to my Friend in China to become their escort . Then that way you can get out of my life.

She gulped in fear

Her: You can't get rid of me. Especially now that I'm carrying your child.

I clapped my hands once. Why was she still in

front of me standing with her two feet when she could be laying flat on her back waiting for the corpse truck ?

Me: My patience is running out. I don't know whether you're mentally disturbed or your just obsessed with me.

Her: I'm not mentally disturbed nor obsessed..I'm just ( stepping close to me) in love with you

She tried touching my hand but I quickly shrug her off.

Me: Melod-

Her: Melissa

Me: Yeah that.

She once again tries to put her claws on me

Me : Stop fuckin trying to touch me !

Her: You didn't stop me when my hands roamed freely on your sexy body at that night of the

party

She winks at me , she think she sexy

What she doesn't know is she looks like a disconnected robot ,fluttering it's eyes open

Him: I made you fall Ass first and I'm sure your bum hurt after ,but now

I seized her by neck with both hands and lifted her high in the air,squeezing her throat so hard along the way,She was struggling to breath.

I watched her face turning almost blue as she struggled and writhed weakly in my grip.

I let go off her and she fell on the ground,coughing and gasping for breath. She was shaking and convulsing uncontrollably.

Him: Now. You are going to go to Alona,And tell her the truth or else..

She quickly nod before I even finished.

Her: O-

She tried to speak but nothing came out but a pathetic squeak.

She looked frightened, she should be .

My I father used to say.. " Put enough fear in them so they would always have it in the back of their minds what may happen next if they defy you"

She knows what I'll do to her if she defy me .

Before I could turn to leave, my phone rang

Business.

Me: Avez-vous obtenu les paquets ? (Did you get the packages)

..

Me: On a beau faire des affaires avec vous ( It was nice doing business with you)

I hang up as I put my phone in my pocket and before I could say something to her, she sprint off running

I laughed my Ass off

She really didn't think I was making a deal to sell her off to china did she ? I mean I wasn't even speaking Chinese it was French. Bitch does' even know the difference. I caught my breath as I got in the car,guess I'll see later

.....

ALONA'S POV

I was sitting with with mom at the dinner table,she just returned from work and I had just dished out

Her: Where's Melissa ?

I shrug

Me: She went out a few m- (Hearing the door open at the front) that must be her.

She appeared looking distressed

Me: Umntu omithiyo aka hambu ngobu suku ,

you know Ku gqwirhy phandle.

I said smirking at the revelation I made in front of mom, I'm not sure if she told her yet.

Mom: True that.

She said as she was focused on dishing out the salad for herself

Melissa: I know but I needed to go to the shop, I'll be up in my room pass by me when you going to bed.

She said looking at me.

I rolled my eyes

Mom: Awutyi ? (Aren't you eating ?)

She shook her head

Her: I already got something you know, people in my condition can't wait till the dinner time

She said laughing lightly but it was strained.

Mom nods at her

Mom: Good night then

She said as Mellissa turned to leave.

Me: So she told you about the pregnancy.

Her: That's the main reason for this visit

Me: Ma ?

I asked,not really understanding what she meant

Her: She did let me know that she was pregnant. And she couldn't stay with her mom ,she's always out beside that she drinks,smokes and verbally abuse her sometimes. She doesn't need that kind of vibe around her as it could harm the baby so she decided to come here and I welcomed her in. Atleast I can support her..

I looked at her with my mouth agape.

She was already pregnant before she even



came here.

I nod dumbly. I put my food in the fridge before telling mom that I have a headache and I'm going to sleep.

Her: Should I bring you some pills ?

Me: Please. But you going to find me in Melissa's room.

I need to get some answers.

I budged in her room and found her sitting in Rubbing her neck which it's colour was irritative red.

Her: I.. Lied.

She said, Looking at her confused for a moment.

Me: About ?

Her: Everything. I lied about..sleeping with Reece

Gulping nervously.

Her: I lied about him being responsible for the

pregnancy.

Her: I just wanted you two to break up. I couldn't bear seeing you happy with him. I wanted that for my self, Everything in your life seemed to be perfect,unlike mine.

Me: So you decided to hurt me,play with my feelings.. How come didn't I see all this, How did you p-

Mom enters from the door,stopping myself from saying anyyhing.

She hands me the pills and I thank her

Mom: Packet of my sleeping pills are missing from the pills cabinet. Any of you took them ?

I shook my head, the move followed by Melissa who seemed like to be debating on something

Mom: Maybe I took and left them at the hospital,or my bag .. You girls have a good night.

She went out.

Wait a minute. Missing pills, I've seen Melissa in mom's room and she was looking for some pills and s-

Her: I drugged him.

I should have known

Her: I took the pills and put them in his drink.

[11/09, 17:14] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 61

Reece was mad and maybe hurt because I didn't trust him.

I had to make this right.

Right when the last bell rang on Friday indicating end of school ,I had went straight to his house still wearing my school uniform. I didn't care

I let my self in his house at the sitting in were his friends ,they all were looking at me that I

started feeling self conscious. I greeted them before I asked for Reece and they told me he was in his office.

I went up, finding him so focused on his laptop while he scribbled on a paper on the side. He was busy and looked like he hadn't slept for days. He looked tired and I didn't want to bother him but I needed to fix this.

Me: You look tired.

I said letting him know of my presence, I had a feeling he already knew I was in the room but was ignoring me

Him: What are you doing here. ?

He asked, his voice void of emotion

Ouch

Me: We need to fix things.

Him: Now you also decide when or when not to fix our issue after you decided when and where not to have sex with. Nob' ucimb uyi ndodam ne

? You wear the pants in this relationship.

..

Me: What was I supposed to do nor react when I found you two in that position ?

Him: You had every right to react the way you did but you were also supposed to let me explain (shrugs) or something.. It really bugs me that you don't trust me

Me: Do you blame me ? Do you blame me for having trust issues

Him: No. But Alona you know I never lie to you.

Me: Its not easy especially given your history with girls.

He sighs,rubbing his temples with the tip of his fingers

Me: ..But I'm sorry

Him: Okay. Now leave I need to do some paper work

Me: Ngoku why uthetha nam ingathi udikiwe.  
( Why are you talking to me like you fed up with me? )

He glared at me.

Me: And Reece..

Him: What. ?

Me: There are other things that need to be fixed in this relationship.

Him: Like..?

.

Me: The time we spend together .. And When we spend time together it's either you always have to get back to the warehouse or you have to finish up some paper work. I just need to feel special, maybe sometimes when you not busy we can go out together..you can make dinner for me or-

Him: You pushing it.

Me: Mxm. You'll never get it.

I said getting up

Me: Can you drive me home then ?

Him: Princess,I'm really busy right now. You can go watch Tv my room or go to the entertainment room for the time being , I'll drive you home later.

Mxm. I took my bag and went out slamming the door behind with force.

The was no way I was waiting for him,I had to get home to my stuff. And I didn't have a taxi fare with me

I headed to the sitting room and only then I noticed Anele.

Me: Can you please drive me home ?

The was silence,not only from him. But the room was silent as all eyes were on us

Him: I uh .. Where's Reece.

Me: 'Too' busy ,he can't

He glanced towards his friends,scratching the back of his head.

He seemed hesitant but shrugged anyway as he got up.

Inside the car on our way,we sat in a awkward silence.

Him: He's going to kill me.

Him: I don't know what it is about you that makes me can't refuse you what you want, that I'll end up getting in trouble with Reece

Me: It must be my charm

I said laughing

He chuckles

Him: It got me blind then. You still look pretty even in your uniform.

Me: Thanks.

I said smiling shyly



Him: His lucky you know. Anyone would literally kill to be with you

Me: I'm not that special, each and every guy I have ever met still screws me over

Him: I wouldn't though

Me: We'll see as time goes

Him: Maybe if you give me a chance I'll be what you want in a man.

He said his hand wanting to touch my Cheek but he stopped himself halfway. By now he was parked a few houses away from.

I shook my head of any thoughts

Me: I'm with Reece

Him: I know but then he doesn't have to know

Me: He'll find out

He shrugs

Him: I'll take my chances. I just want us to try because I think we'll be perfect for each other. I

want to make you happy

Me: I am happy. He makes me happy

Him: Says someone who's considering my offer.

Me: So what if i'm not really happy ? Reece ,He ain't no ordinary guy I get where he's coming from. I can't expect much out of him he's already having a hard time trying to be the best for me. So I'll appreciate what he is giving me

Him: Okay.. Okay. Sorry for pissing you off.

Me: I'm not..it's just,I hate it when people judge him, None of you get him nor see what I see in him.

Him: That's because he acts different with you and acts a whole lot different with us.

Me: I get that. But I'm sure you guys don't want a weak leader. You want him to get soft for you too

Him: No,but I swear that guy will kill you for even stepping on his foot. Matter of fact he'll kill

me for being close to you, just by thinking of what he's going to do to me gives me shivers down my spine. I'm sure he already knows and going back to his house right now it's like meeting my death halfway.

Me: Thanks for the ride though.

Him: You'll come to my funeral right ?

I laugh at his serious face.

Him: You can present yourself to my family as my fiance

I laughed even more, wiping the tear that fell from my eye.

Me: I'm sure it won't get that far

I brush his shoulder in mock pity

He glares at me.

I open the door to get out he also follows the mood and walks me home, when I was near, he turned around and left after I told him I'll see

him some other time and he responded saying if he'll still be alive.

Reece was not bad as they made him out to be ,at least not to me.

Later that day I was in my room finishing off my homework when I got a text from Reece

" Jong' apha no Kritsi ndini. I don't remember saying you can ask Anele to drive you home,now explain to me how the fuck you even know him" ?

You know what,I take back the part I said he wasn't bad.

[11/09, 17:14] [ +263 77 250 3508 : Inset 62

I quickly hung up on him and switched my phone off.

Reece is scary when he wants to. I could feel myself starting to sweat just by the line he said.

It felt like he could show up right there and then to strangle me to death

I could literally hear him spit venomously through the phone

The following day.

Earlier in the morning I went for a run, it's been a while and later on I was with Romeo in my room.

It was kinda of a girls night..if you know what I mean #RollsEyesDramatically .

He was staying over for the weekend and right now we were watching a movie with a couple of snacks scattered around us, we were also catching up

..

..

Me: She confessed to drugging Reece and

Faking the pregnancy.

He shook his head

Him: The way she so cruel and jealous. She could bewitch my five year old sister for graduating from creche

I pushed him lightly laughing at his comment

Him: You have to be careful around her though.

I nod and before I could say something, his phone rang. I watched as he rolled his eyes after his eyes went over the name

Him: What do you want ?

...

Him: Noba ifuna ndiku xelele indaba zakho. Yayazi yimalini itoti yebisi endadi yisela njeb usoyiswa Yi R10 ye drink ? Jonga ndiyeke .  
( Maybe you want me to tell you your stuff. Do you know how much the formula tin I used to drink when I was a baby.. Costs . While you out there and you can't even afford to buy me a R10

drink ? Just leave me alone.)

He said as he hung up.

Him: I recently dated a broke guy . Yazi biggest mistake of my life. It's so hard wearing the pants in a relationship cause I was out there paying for dates that he suggested and bought him stuff with my monthly allowance. We broke up now he won't return some of my expensive stuff. Nxaah ! And to think that history almost repeated itself. I'm not going back there.

And here I was thinking my life has alot of drama,ahh Romeo. He never seized to amaze me.

My phone beeped an incoming text.

Me: Reece is outside.

I said biting my lower lip

Him: Wenze ntoni ngoku ? ( What did you do now)

Me: I'll tell you later.If I'm not back in a hour call the police

Him: It could take him less than 5 minutes to kill you. Iyothe ibetha lo hour ndibe ndiyoku jonga umzimba ube ubanda sele eku thumela kwelinye ilizwe. ( It could take him less than 5 minutes to kill you. You'd be dead and your body cold within an hour and his plane halfway across the country transporting you to wherever)

I stared at him.

Me: Thanks.

He was waiting for me outside his car.He looked great in a pair of jeans,a dress up shirt,a leather jacket and a pair of Jordan I think. He had a beanie on . But expression on his face was anything but great

I stood a couple of feet away from him. He put his hand firmly on my waist before pulling me to



him.

Him: Why do you like pissing me off ?

He asked in his usual deep,slow voice that sounded like he was bored.He was looking down at me

Me: I- don't like to and I swear it's not my intentions but I really needed to get home,you always make come last. You put your gang, friends Sometimes you work first either then me. treating me like i'm just your distraction when you not busy

Him: You know that's not true

Me: It's not ? If you phone is to ring right now and you needed at the warehouse you'd drop me and go attend to them,ndaxoka ? ( Am I lying ?)

Him: No,but Alona you need to understand that in my line of work time is everything.

I folded my hands to my chest as I pouted.

He pecks my lips

Him: You cute . But Jonga ,yesterday.I never said you could go home especially with anele,Umaz' elaphi ? (where do you know him from ?)

Me: I bumped into him at the party after I saw you with.. Melissa. He's like a friend.

Him: What's with you with befriending guys ?

Me: I don't see nothing wrong with it,it's not like I'll date him

Him: I'm sure you don't want me to remind you the last time you befriended some random guy and you wouldn't dare date him nor even let the thought cross your mind Alona I swear I'll make you regret it

I gulped in fear

Me: Stop threatening me Reece

Him: It's not a threat babe its just a warning.

Me: You can't choose friends for me cause I certainly don't do it for

Him: Shwabula uyeke ( Mumble all you want)  
Alona ,You stay away from him. At least he'll be smart enough now to do so.

I furrowed my eyebrows together

Me: What did you do ?

Him: I taught him a lesson

His retort pierce my heart,swallowing my fear once again

Him: He screamed the rest of the lesson,such a rude learner

Me: You-You killed him

Shaking his head

Him: I did not kill him,Princess. Lets just say smiling will now be difficult for him .

He smirked

Him: You should have seen you face. Relax,I

didn't do anything to him..yet. he's one of the valuable guys in the crew. But I'll take him out in a blink of an eye if he keeps messing with you.

He said brushing my cheek.

Him: You turning me on with that night dress

He said biting his lower lip,now dismissing the argument we were having

He was looking below my chest,where a pink light fabric peeked out . It had a little dip in-between showing my breasts

He undid the belt of my gown before opening it up to expose the whole dress that end mid thigh

I went to get his hands off and cover myself when he captured my hands in his,wrapping them around his waist as he Tsk at me shaking his head in disapproval of what I was trying to do.

He used his finger to peek through the top of

the dress,at my breast. I had no bra on.

He planted a kiss on my neck,His teeth grazing on the skin lightly before his lips captured mine

His hand slowly found its way to the side of my thigh,brushing it before it went up to the line of panties

I pulled away and took his hand to pull it out of my dress but he wouldn't budge. I glared up at him

Me: We out in public.

Him: So ?

Me: We can't be doing this.

Him: Like I give a fuck about what they think. I'll be getting laid ,that's what matters.

Rolling my eyes

Me: Not this time,I need to get back inside.

Ndishiyee u Romeo. ( I left Romeo)

Him: So I won't get to fuck you. ?

He asked ever so blunt,I hit his hard brick like chest with my fist. He chuckles

Him: Have a great time explaining that hickey then.

He said pointing at my neck before he kissed my forehead and got in his car and sped off.

Leaving me there with my mouth agape as my hand covered the spot on my neck.

That son of a -

I stomped off inside.

Passing by the mirror on the side of the wall at the launge

I saw the mark,it was purplish

How come I didn't feel anything when he did it ?

I went up in my room and found Romeo sitting cross legged on my bed with a bag of chips while his eyes were focused on the screen

I still had my hand to my neck and I quickly

dashed to my walk in closet for a scarf before joining Romeo in bed.

It wasn't a couple of minutes when he noticed it.

Him: What's up with the scarf ?, uku krwitshile ?  
Let me see how bad the mark is.

He said trying to get it off me but I refused.

He pinned me down on the bed as he quickly unwrapped the scarf from my neck.

I watched as he grinned when he saw it.

[11/09, 17:14] +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 63

It was all candles and dim lights at Reece's dining room.

It was Sunday and after I asked him to drop Romeo off ,we went back to his house and I found the suprise.

We were about to leave dinner as we sat at the prepared table, It was kinda Awkward..

Something was off.

Him: There ,My phone is off so no one will bother us.

He said as he put his phone on the side.

Me: You making it sound like you don't want all this, It's like I'm forcing you to do this or something.

I mumbled

He bangs the table with his fist,breaking a few things as they fell off

Him: Dammit Alona what do you want ? This ( pointing to the table) is me being romantic or whatever you call it. Andazi ufuna ntoni. Atleast act like you appreciate it instead of complaining and putting pressure on me

He said yelling at me

I don't know why he was being a dick about it.

I got up ,took my bag and was heading out



when I felt a death grip like on my arm as he turned me to face him.

Him: Uyaphi Alona.

..

..

He smacked my back on the wall before he closed the space between us, pinning me with his body, I was pressed up in between him and the wall and it hurt with the pressure.

Him: Isn't this what you wanted. ? Now where the fuck are you going ?

Me: I can clearly see you not in the mood right now so I thought I sh-

Him: This is me being in the mood then

He said as he planted his lips on mine ,the kiss was rough

I could taste brandy, no wonder he was tipsy.

He gripped my butt as he lifted me up to wrap my arms around his neck and my legs on his waist

His hand went under my shirt and he squeezed my left breast and I whimpered

I tried pushing him off me, he didn't budge.

He had his hand on my chin holding me in place as he continued to kiss me

I don't know when we got to his room but he was on top of me as he teared my shirt off tossing it on the side.

Me: Reece!

He unbuttoned my jeans and slid them down to my feet, he had both my hands pinned down on either side of my head in a firm grip.

After he teared the the condom with his teeth, he used his other hand to slid it on his manhood before he slammed into me.

..

..

After he was done he went to the bathroom and came out wearing boxers and had a towel on his other hand .He wanted to wipe me but I refused,I reached out for the towel

Him: Just open up Alona

I shook my head he pinched the side of my thigh and I winced now rubbing the spot while he wiped me.

I wore my under garments and my jeans,I was about to wear my top when I remembered he messed it up. I went to his walk in closet and took out a hoodie wearing it over.

I went out of his room heading downstairs to take my bag before making my way out.

It was dark out here but I decided to be brave right now,I walked till I was a couple of feet

away before taking out my phone and going through my contact.

I decided on calling Anele to come pick me up and I was glad when he said he was on his way.

After Anele dropped me off, I took a long warm bath which was soothing. I got dressed in my warm pyjamas before getting under my blankets.

I was wrapped up in my own thoughts

Oz came a bit later with a box of pizza, he got inside the covers and I snuggled on his side while we ate.

Him: The last slice is mine

Me: Why do you always have to have the last ?

Him: I'm the eldest

Me: But I only had two

Him: Not my fault that ulibele Ku qhosha ngathi hleli ne O yakho. ( Not my fault that you are shy

like you are with your boyfriend)

He shrugs,I punch his shoulder and he chuckles

.....

On Monday

After school I was walking out the school gates alone after Romeo decided to call in sick,pretty much I was grumpy the whole day. I hate it when I don't get to see him

I noticed the crowd around me going crazy, only to find Reece who was was parked on the driveway. He was one of his car that attracted too much attention

I know he was here for me ,I wasn't in the mood for him after the way he treated me yesterday but I knew better than to give him shit about it.

I got in the passenger seat and no words were exchanged.

I just looked outside the window while he drove. He passed by Steers getting a takeaway box

before he drove to the beach

Not many people went to the beach during the week

It was peaceful

He found a spot for his car , with no means of getting out

..

..

Him: Princess..

Here we go

He tried touching my hand but I moved it out of his reach, folding my arms to my chest I looked outside at the waves thinking how they resembled my life in a way.

Him: I'm sorry.

Turning my face to look at him, his hand lingered on my cheek as he brushed it

Me: You hurt me, Reece.

Him: I know I did and I'm sorry

Me: Sorry won't change the way you made me feel . You can't do as you please with me

Him: I'm s-

Me: I feel like you forced yourself to me.

Him: Please don't put it like that you making me feel like I'm him

I knew who he was referring to.

Him: My father used to.. Please himself on my mother whenever he wanted to,whether she wanted to or not it didn't matter and sometimes he made us watch. He'd have his men from the gang hold our heads forcing us to look at the scene and whenever we tried to look away he'd beat us. Yesterday when I thought about what I did to you,I told myself that I'm no better than him,I'm messed up.

He sighed.

Him: You know when I made that dinner for you

yesterday,trying to be 'Romantic '

He chuckles before continuing

Him: It made me think of the day it all happened,the day I killed her. She had made dinner perfectly set for her husband,she tried in every way to break through his walls and make him see how much she loved him but it was almost impossible,he didn't want to be loved.

He strongly believed Females were only there to use,abuse and control. He never believed in love because if he loved that would make him weak and vulnerable to his enemies,Just like he said to me yesterday.

Me: W-where ? I thought..

Him: The old man got me to visit him in prison and I couldn't refuse him Alona even if I wanted to,he has this power over me. He gave me shit on how I was going to drive the gang down the drain Because I was a love sick puppy who was losing it over some high school girl. He told me



how I was showing weakness after I was taught not to feel or have any emotional attachment to anyone. because it could lead to distraction that men like us couldn't have. You know ..He forced my mom to get me aborted until he found out I was a boy. A male to carry his legacy. I was his puppet and his punching bag growing up. The son who would be taught everything from torturing,blackmailing,killing and anything to get what I wanted. He beat it into me..even how to treat a female.

He said as he put his hand on top of mine, intertwining our fingers together.

Him: You don't deserve this,You don't deserve someone like me. That's why I think..it would be best to..let you go.

[11/09, 17:15] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 64

My breath hitched in my throat as I closed my eyes shut,taking in what he just said

Me: You.. breaking up with me

I asked in a small voice it felt like I was going to cry

Him: It's for the best

Me: No.

Him: Alona

Me: You can't do this to me Reece. You can't, I'm not allowing it.

Him: Your life will always be on the line because of me. Maybe if I just stay away from you my ghosts will deal with me directly without you getting hurt. As long as you with me Alona you'll never find peace.

I furiously wipe away the tear that had fallen from my eye

Me: I don't care about that. As long as you will be with me every step of the way, As long as we love each other. Reece please, don't throw this away

I said in a rush as I continued to sob

He shook his head.

Him: You need to understand that I'm doing this for you, to keep you safe from my rivals, from me.

Me: What if I don't want to ?

Him: It's not up to you, I know what I'm doing

Me: You breaking up with me ! I'm not good enough for you, strong enough for you that's exactly what you are doing

Him: You know that's not true

Me: You got what you wanted, which was to sleep with and suddenly you don't want to be with me ?

Him: That's not what this is about, Alona.

Me: Then what is it about ?

Him: It's about me doing the right thing and stopping my selfishness ,to stop ..

Me: You used me and now you done so you throwing me away, Oz was right.

Him: I don't care what anyone else paint me out to be.. I can't bare seeing you messed up in my fucked up world.

Me: But I-I love you, it's you that I want

I said as I snuggled up on his side,wetting his shirt with my tears.

He kissed my forehead.

Him: I love you,and I love you too much that I don't want to see you hurt

Me: I'm not worth fighting for ?

Him: You worth my everything, I'd give you anything you want but I can't guarantee your safety.

Me: You've made your mind

..

Me: Your father..did he persuade you into doing this ?

Him: He has nothing to do with this

Me: Is it ? Then how come doing all of this to me just when you have visited him the previous day.

Me: He has some sort of power over you. He woke up your inner beast didn't he ? He's making you out to be heartless and cold once again

Him: You know nothing about my relationship with my father

Me: But I do know that it's fucked up, when you minds combine

Him: Shut up.

Me: Always out to please your father

Him: Alona.

Me: Are you afraid of him ?,that he's going to beat you..he's locked for g-

Akhange ndiyi gqibe

I held my cheek as I looked to the side after he back slapped me.

To say I was shocked was the least

I was scared. Tears immediately pulled out of my eyes in a rush and I couldn't stop them.

Reece has never been like this with me.

I slowly turned to look at him

He had a strained look on.

Me: I get the message clearly now.

He was really breaking up with me and there was nothing I could do about it.

I opened the door and got out as I took my bag.

I was going to take a taxi back home ,at least I had enough money with me,it was going to cost me ..given the distance from here to the hood

I couldn't see were I was heading as my eyes were abit blurry. Suddenly I felt arms lift me up.

Reece had taken me to the passenger seat and locked the door behind.

Him: I know you have every reason to not want anything to do with me but at least let me drive you home.

..

..

As his car came to a stop on the driveways outside the gate

I was about to get out,when his hand reached out to stop me

I flinched as his hand made contact with mine

and he quickly let go.

Him: I'm sorry

I got out and made my way inside and went up to my room after ignoring my brother in the lounge. I didn't want to be bothered.

I locked my room and changed out of my uniform,taking sleeping pills before tucking myself inside the covers as I cried myself to sleep.

When I woke up the following day,I was emotionally drained.

I had over slept and I was really late for school I wouldn't make it. I must have been really out,no wonder.. I took two sleeping pills just to get me to sleep.

I took my phone on the nightstand,Just a few missed calls from Romeo,probably want to know why I didn't come to school.

No messages no missed calls from Reece,over



the months we have been dating,I had gotten used to waking up to his text messages

It wasn't the usual good morning that every one was used to.

It was Reece after all,a ' Good morning princess,I miss being in between your legs ' was his type of a thing. I loved them nevertheless,they were from my special somebody.

And now to think that,he broke up with me

I remember the time he swore not to ever let me go,how he'd kill anyone who would stand in his way to get him.

I sigh

I can't be torturing myself like this,I needed him i needed to hear his voice

I took my phone and dialled his number,pressing the call button. I waited and waited to hear his voice say 'Princess ' bit

instead it rang till it went to voice mail.

I threw my phone furiously to the side of the bed making it topple over to the side but I didn't care.

My eyes started to water as I pulled on my hair, I was going crazy.

There was a knock at the door probably my brother checking up on me, I didn't want him to see me like this

He knocked and knocked but I had no means of getting up

Him: I know you're awake.

..

Him: If you don't open up right now, I'll just go gangster on it.

Meaning he was just doing me a favor for knocking he could have long gotten in if he wanted to

I quickly wiped my face clean but couldn't help it as I could feel them water again. I took in a deep breath then letting out,I got up and went to open for him while I went back to bed

He also got inside and held me from behind as he rested his head on my shoulder peeking at my face

Him: What's wrong ?

I just shook my head

Him: If you don't want to talk about it now it's f-

Me: He broke up with me.

He was silent for a moment and before he could say something

Me: Say it. Say you told me,That he was going to use me then leave me

He combed his hand through my hair in a soothing manner

Him: I'm sorry.

[11/09, 17:15] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 65

2 weeks had passed since I talked to Reece.

It was hard for me and everytime I thought about him I just cried.

I needed a distraction and Anele was there.

..

..

After deciding what to wear, I change into it before combing my hair in my signature high messy bun. I wore my perfume before putting in a few stuff in my bag and making my way out I bumped into my brother

Him: Uyaphi umhle ?

Me: Out

Him: That I can see, But where ?

Me: I never ask you about your whereabouts

Him: I'm the eldest here.

Me: I'm going to the mall with Romeo

Him: That was so hard to answer

He says folding his arms to his chest making his muscles budge

Him: You're lying.

He stated matter of fact

Me: I'm going on a date.

His eyebrows quirks up,clearing his throat in awkwardness

Him: Okay. Do you have uh -.. You know

Motions with his hand for me to catch on

Me: What ? (I was confused for a moment) I'm not going to have sex you moron !

I screech,hitting him repeatedly with my bag as I ran after him

Him: I'm just looking out for you

He Shouts back trying to defend himself.

I hit his back as he ran out the door,I was out on his tale.

He stopped making me bump on his iron like back,peeking from his shoulders which was impossible

I snuggled under his armpit to see Anele with his car parked outside the gate

Me: Oh

I said,fixing myself a bit before going to stand in front of the gate waiting for it to open automatically,I got out and greeted him as he stood outside his car.

He was cute I tell you. Dark chocolate skin handsome

" If she comes back crying,I swear I'll hunt you down and skin you off alive "

I heard my brother say to him as he whispered ever so slightly in his ear,he patted Anele's back a little.

Me: Oz !

Him: I'm not scaring him off,just a friendly gesture.

He says looking innocent.

Me: Ok can you go inside now

He raises his hand in surrender ,kisses my forehead before walking off mumbling " Wait till Reece hears about this"

I roll my eyes

Me: I love you

Him: I love you too baby,call me if you need anything.

.....

Anele decided to take me to his hood and we were going to go eat at this place were you buy

your own booze while waiting for your meat to braai ,it was tavern like.

I was comfortable with this. Someone would think it's out of my comfort zone .

..

..

After A day well spent with Anele,he drove me back home later.

Me: Thank you for taking me out,I had a great time.

I said to him as we stood outside his car that was parked near my home.

Him: Good to know and I'd love to do it again,that's if you want to

I nod.

Me: Sure.

Him: So you agreeing to a second date. ? Does



that mean we .. (stopping mid sentence) Look Alona, I want us to be on the same page here so I hope you know that I'm not doing this out of a friendly gesture. I'm into you. I want us to be more than friends, I'm not taking advantage of you since you broke up with him .. The least I want is you making irrational decision and making me your rebound guy to make you forget about him,I'll give you time to think about it okay ?

I was silent for a moment before I nod my head in understanding

He puts his hand on mine,intertwining our fingers.

Him: Why don't you go inside before you catch a cold.

I roll my eyes smiling lightly

He puts his finger under my chin,

Him: Good to see no single tear, the last thing I want is your brother hot on my tail

I laugh

Me: I might just fake them, I'd love to see the skinned off version of you.

He frowns

Him: You know I think I'll still be cute.

Me: It's so rare for a guy to call himself cute. The word we looking for here is handsome

He grins

Him: Ahh..so you think I'm handsome

I blush at the revelation I made.

Me: There's nothing wrong giving out compliments

Him: Sure ..

He grins even more

Me: Stop being a jerk about it you making me

blush.

Him: Sorry. I just love it when you blush. Your cheeks turn red (pinches them lightly) and they're so soft.

I swat his hand away as he chuckles.

Me: I need to get inside now, I still have to make dinner.

Him: So you can cook

Me: Of course I can ! What do you take me for

Him: Take away, green salad

I fake gasp

Me: I assure you that is not me at all, I can cook.

Him: Maybe you can cook for me some time and I can be the judge of that

Me: You on.

I said briefly hugging him before saying my bye's and walking home.

"I made dinner"

I hear my brother say,he was watching t.v

Me: No wonder it looks like its gonna rain.

Him: Mxm enkosi wakho lowo ? nangomso.

( Is that your thank you ? )

Me: Thank you.

I said as I kissed his cheek. I went to put my bag up in my room before going to the kitchen for my plate,pouring juice also before going to seat next to Oz.

I snuggled up on his side,Covering myself with a fleece blanket and started eating.

His hand reached out to take meat from my plate,I swat it away

I glare at him as he frowned

Him: You not going to finish all that.

Me: I will

Him: You gonna gain some weight and you aren't gonna look good on your farewell dress and you know its just a month away.

Me: You know it's almost impossible for me to gain.

I said taking a bite from my chicken,It tasted good.

He mumbled something under his breath

Me: Yhu ! Ina Oz. Caba ndizode ndomiwe.

I said giving him my piece.

He chuckled as he took it.

NOT EDITED.

[11/09, 17:15] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 66

Anele picked me up Friday after school.

And he first drove me home to change out of

my uniform before he drove us to his house

We decided to stay in and watch movies

Me: Don't pick a horror movie ,plesse

He looked at me smirking

Him: Why ?

Me: It gives me nightmares.

He pinches my cheeks as he cooed at me,I swat his hand away frowning. I frowned

Him: You want romance ?

I quickly shook my head.

Me: I can't deal.

Him: Uh ,Action?

I shrugged

Me: Okay.

..

Later on

After I had cooked I dished out for both of us before going to sit next to him.

When we were done,we just sat there and chatted about random stuff

Him: I'll marry you one day

Me: Because of my cooking ?

He grins

Him: That,and maybe because I think you perfect

Me: I'm not

Him: You are to me. Beautiful,Smart

He said as he touched my cheek

He leaned forward and started kissing me,I didn't respond immediately as i was debating whether to pull out but I ended up following his lead.

He pushed me down in a laying position as he was on top of me,him supporting his weight on

his elbows.

He put his hand on the small of back, rubbing the skin before it went up and his fingers lightly grazed the clip of my bra.

I pushed him lightly and he pulled out.

He sat beside me while I pulled my shirt down and tried to fix my hair

Him: I'm sorry, I shouldn't have taken it that far. I got carried away

I nod

Him: I'm not sorry for kissing you though. Your lips have been inviting me and they feel like heaven.

He said biting his lower lip.

I punched his shoulder playfully.

Me: Shut up

Him: You're such a good kisser.



I shrugged

Me: You not bad yourself.

Him: Not bad? these (pointing at his lips) can do everything and they're masters.

Me: Everything..

He nods I focus on his eyes that we looking at my chest,then below

It looked like he was undressing me with his eyes

Him: They can take yo to cloud nine

Me: You Pervet

I screeched at him as I hit him with a pillow

He laughed.

Him: Any thing in mind that you want us to do. ?

Me : Maybe we- wait,(taking my phone) Ah Look at the time,I need to get home

Him: Why don't you stay over ?,I'm having a

great time with you.

..

I dialed my brothers number and he immediately picked up.

Me: I'm not coming back,I mean can I sleep over ?

Him: Sleepover at who's house. ? Last time I checked Reece is out of the country.

Me: Romeos

Him: You know I know you lying. You've already made up your mind anyway,what I say right now won't matter and that makes me want to take my sjambok(whip) and come whip your ass home.

Me: You don't own a sjambok.

Him: Whatever. I wasn't going to come home anyway and I was gonna tell you to crash at

mom's place but since you're out.

He trailed off

Me: Okay

Him: And Alona

Me: Ozzie

I Said dragging the e at the end

Him: I told you to stop calling me that.

I swear he grit through his teeth,How much he hated the nickname I had for him since I was little, back then I couldn't really say his name because it was long and all so I cut it to Ozzie •

Me: But you know it has been stuck with me since I was little

I heard him sigh

Him: Just don't do something I wouldn't do

Me: There's nothing you wouldn't do.

He was quite for a moment,I was getting on his

nerves,How I easily irked him

Me: I promise.

Him: Okay. Call me if you need something.

Me: I will.

I said a si hung up

"I like your relationship with your brother"

I heard Anele say

Me: He's my everything.

He nods

Him: Is there anything you want me to get for you ?

Me: A tub of ice cream would do.

I said as I positioned myself on the couch in a fetal position trying to cover myself with the cushion

He shook his head

Him: I don't really like sweet stuff, I'm not really a fan of such.

I nod

Him: Maybe we can go get it, Come on I'll drive us to McDonald's

Me: But I'm tired.

He looked for his car keys before coming to pick me up in bridal style and off we went.

.....

The following day after Anele dropped me off. There was no one in the house, my brother hadn't come back and I was bored so I decided to go to the hood to my mom.

After I got dressed and was ready to go.

I took a taxi fare.

When I got there and found her busy cleaning the yard.

Me: Someone is busy

I said hugging her from behind.

Her: Ina Alona.

She said handing me the water pipe to finish off watering the garden.

I took it pouting furiously.

Me: So much for missing you.

She kissed my cheek.

Me: You look stressed out.

I said switching off the tap putting the pipe aside as I followed her inside.

She sat at the couch, and I waited for her to talk

Her: Melissa,She had a miscarriage

[11/09, 17:15] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 67

Mom: Melissa had a Miscarriage.

My mouth formed a small letter O

Regardless of what she put me through,I still felt sorry for her.

I can't begin to imagine what she was going

through.

Me: How did it happen. Why didn't you tell me ?

Not that i wanted to know

Her: Wednesday morning when she woke up,she said she rushed to the toilet because she was not feeling well and then ..(she didn't want to fill me in) I took her to the hospital and it was already too late.

Me: Where is she ?

Her: In her room,she stays the most of the time. I'm worried about her.

Me: Why ? I mean I get that she j-

Her: She's void of emotion, I really don't know what's going on inside that head, What if she commits suicide ? She could be depressed for all I know. I can't have that happening under my watch, how would I explain it to her mother.

Maybe you can talk to her ?

She suggested.

Me: Me ?

We hate each other's guts .

Of course I didn't say that, she would have demanded to know why.

Me: But -

Her: maybe she's afraid to open up to me..You two can understand each other better.

If only you knew.

Me: Okay.

Atleast I still had a sense of humour.

Her: Alona

I turned to face her as I have already gotten up

Her: I need a cup of coffe.

Me: Only of the reasons I dread coming here

I mumbled.

I got up and went to make the coffee for her, going to give it to her.



Her: When you done come back her we need to have a mother and daughter conversation.

And that my friends means an earful of lectures.

See why I dread coming here ? one of another reasons

I got up and headed to her room.

I breathed in and out blocking all the stuff that came into mind of what she did to me.

I knocked twice before letting myself in.

She was sprawled out on the bed laying on her back listening to music

I went to sit at the edge of the bed.

And she got startled at the move, guess she was deep in her music that she didn't hear someone getting in.

Her: Ufuna ntoni Alona ( What do you want

Alona ?)

Me: Mom thought I should check up on you.

Her: You can see I'm fine now get out.

She said pointing to the door ,glaring at me.

I Remained seated.

Me: I can't begin to imagine what you are going through, I'm sorry

Her: Don't be,I'm not feeling sorry for myself. Infact I'm glad that it happened, I won't have to stay with the constant reminder of what that bastard did to me.

I was confused for a moment

Me: What are you talking about ?

She sighed

Her: I came to stay here because I was running away from my stepfather. He raped me and when I found out that I was pregnant. I had no choice but to tell my mother,who didn't believe

me. We had an argument and went away from the place I used to call home,here I am.

Me: I'm so sorry

That is the only thing that seemed to come out of my mouth.

I understand what she went through,because I also went through it but the bastard didn't go to far

And I almost let him because I was afraid.

You know so many times females and males don't report the abuse because of the threats the abuser gives or just the shame of the act. It isn't your fault and though it may seem like there is no hope on the other side,there is. It's just our choice to do something about it.

.....

Sunday evening,I was with Anele at the park in my area

We were just standing and chatting. I loved

having conversations with him.

Him: So you don't want to spend the night with me, again

Me: It's a school day tomorrow. Besides that, you snore so I don't think I want to have another sleepless night listening to you

I say teasingly

Him: Me snoring ? So much for you to snuggle up to me while I'm snoring

Me: What ?

Him: You snuggled up your small frame on me like a baby , You were so cute.

He smirked at me

I covered my face with my hands, embarrassed. I know I tend to do that a lot even when I'm not sleeping.

Mom says when I was a baby I was so tiny and she always cradled me in her arms when I was

sleeping afraid that I would break or something

I liked to be warm though. So when I have someone next to me, I rather be covered in their arms.

Him: You actually gave me a hard on

Me: What's a hard on

I looked up at him scrunching my face in confusion.

He was silent for a moment and then he burst out laughing.

Him: You're too innocent ,I'll explain it to you another day.

Me: Why not now ? Hard-on

I said , My eyes lit up in understanding of the word. I punched him playfully on his chest as he almost doubled over laughing.

When he stood up straight, his laughter died down as he looked straight ahead of me, with..fear ?

Suddenly I felt two arms wrap around my waist pulling me closer to a muscular body

Feeling a hot breath on my ear caused me to have goosebumps all over my body for some reason my body became aware,there is only one person who gets that reaction out of me

" I guess my little mouse will play when the big bad cat is away "

I just Froze

Whipping myself around I looked up to meet his brown eyes and his face that held a sinister smirk.

" Miss me princess? "

Yeses

[11/09, 17:15] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 68

It waa Reece,Calm as always. You know how

that ended

I gulped in fear.

I wasn't going to give him the satisfaction of knowing how much he affected me now.

I looked him up and down

Turning back to look at Anele,I shrugged

Me: I don't know him,who is he ?

I know how that stung.

I heard Reece chuckle,his usual deep throaty chuckle

With quick reflexes he had his hand clasped firmly on my arm,turning me around

He fisted my hair in his hand while he raised his other hand in an attempted slap

Me: Reece.

Him: So now you know me ?

He asked letting go of me

Anele: Don't man handle her.

Reece takes his eyes off me for a moment to glare at him, If that was directed at me I'd sure would have fainted

If looks could kill Anele would be six feet under ground.

His jaw twitched

Him: Alona, go wait for me in the car.

Wait for him in the car

Me: Wait for you in the car ? Andifuni.

Him: What ?

He asked in a way that also said I'm giving you a chance to say otherwise.

I just shook my head.

Him: Alona.

He said warningly

Anele: Look Man if she d-



And before he could finish,Reece punched his face. It happened in a blur

He staggered towards him and I quickly went to stand in front of Anele in a defensive stance. Reece just grabbed me by my arm and threw me aside like a twig.

He corned Anele on his car and threw punches

Me: REECE!

I got up and tried pulling him by his shirt back,who am I compared to him

I wrapped my arms around his own ,trying to get his attention which was impossible

Me: I'll go with you,I'll go. Please just stop.

He seemed to listen to me stepping away from Anele who was laying on his side on the ground coughing blood.

I didn't want to leave him like this.

I was so scared that I started crying.

The look on Reece eyes right now.

Reece: I'm not done with you, and your family had better get you covered because soon they'll be preparing for your funeral. Infact ,I'll kill you and burn you to ashes I'll send an ashes urn as a gift.

I tried going to Anele to check on him but Reece threw me over his shoulder like a sack of potatoes and headed towards his car.

He threw me on the back seat before shutting the door close and went to his side, he drove like a maniac to wherever and I was assuming his house

Indeed.

He parked

He opened the door to his house, letting me in first then following after as he locked

He kissed me, catching me by surprise and I surprised myself more when I responded. While he did he was ripping my shirt up.

Soon enough I was only left in my bra and panties

I missed feeling his muscles from his chest press up against my body.

His strong arms wrapped around my back.

Seeing the way he was looking at me, with hunger in his eyes made me want him that much more

Crashing his lip on mine once again

His lips were demanding this time. His hands were slowly roaming over my body, feeling each and every part of me

His hand cupped my breasts. I couldn't contain the moans I felt with having him make soothing motions on my nipples.

He laid me down on the bed,kissing me before pulling away

He looked at me,he parted my legs ,letting his hand linger in my inner thigh.

Him: Did you fuck with him ?

He asked with seriousness in his voice.

I shook my head as I gulped

He reached between my legs started running his hand over my folds. Was this an examination ? Yes he was.

Finding the truth

Him: Good.

When I looked at him,he was staring at me with intensity.

He took that moment to place protection on his member before placing himself fully between my legs. Both of his hand were placed on the side of my head as I felt his member on my

entrance

He slammed inside me full force and I screamed out in pain and the surpris

He thrust himself inside and out of me slowly the first few times then he started thrusting faster. His thrusts were so fast I could almost feel the bed move each time.

He was too big for me, anyway

The pain I felt was overshadowed by how good it felt to have him inside me.

After

No words were exchanged between us.

I felt exhausted somehow. Reece lay down next to me and there was a gap in between us as I wrapped my body with the blankets, I had my back to him.

I loved each and every moment I just had with

him but what now. ?

I KNOW IT'S SHORT,FORGIVE ME.

[11/09, 17:15] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 69

We lay in awkwardness,neither of us exchanging word with the other

I had my back to him wrapped around in a blanket while he lay on his back his arms under his head facing the ceiling

He cleared his throat

Him: Alona

I suck in my breath

Me: I know,this was a mistake . It shouldn't have happened especially now that we're not together. You don't have to say it.

I said in one breath,it hurt saying it.

I was about to get up but he held me back, holding me from behind while he had me to his chest

Him: Nothing, Nothing is ever a mistake between us. Whatever happens, the only mistake I know was me breaking up with you. I know I thought I was doing it for us, for you but I was mistaken.

He sighed, running his hand through his hair.

Him: I know I'm an Asshole, as you nicely like to put it. Well this Asshole loves you and I don't ever want to let you go, it do me bad like it did in this whole month. Worst month of my life.

He pecks my cheek, nuzzling his face on my hair inhaling me.

"Damn I Fucken missed you"

I heard him mumble.

I missed you too.

Him: I'm really sorry Princess.

.....

Monday morning

I woke up early and now I had time to Here I was about to drink a cup of coffee, engulfed in my own thoughts that I didn't hear Oz enter and come up right behind me

Him: BANG!

Almost jumping out of my sit I turn to glare at him as I have burned my self with the coffee,Quickly putting the cup down

Me: Yerr Oz !

He chuckles

Taking the cup to his hand,he takes a sip and his face immediately turned into of distaste

Quickly Masking it,he looks at me

Him: It tastes great

Me: I'm sure it does,you can have it

Him: No it's cool,I feel like drinking something



more stronger than it

He says pushing the cup my way.

I gladly take it and take a sip,ready for the warm liquid to make it's way down my throat to warm up my tummy

But it doesn't,Now seriously jumping off my chair I go take it out of my mouth

I hear Him laugh at the background but I'm too occupied by getting the taste out of my mouth

Him: You actually put some type spice in there

Me: Then why didn't you tell me ?

Him: Its me you talking to,Remember ? for all I know I'd kill a rat and stuff it under your pillow and I wouldn't tell you

till I get to to see the priceless moment ..just like this moment,you should have seen your face.

He says continuing to laugh

I sigh

Me: Can you drive me to school ?

Him: Sure lets go

He said taking his car keys from the row of many other

Me: Khayo nxiba

I said as I looked at his bare covered in tattoos chest and grey gutter track pants

He shook his head.

I might stand here all arguing with him back at forth till I forget that I'm s

After Oz drove me to school,I found Romeo waiting for me at the gate

Him: Your brother

He said biting his lower lip,I smacked him at the back of his head

He whined

Him: Hey

Me: Don't even think about it.

Him: Still doesn't give you the right to manhandle me

I looked at him for a moment then burst out laughing

Me: You're so dramatic

Him: I know. So how was your weekend ?

Me: Nothing much. yours ?

Him: Same old, nothing much when you're glowing and you've got (pulling my scarf down)

I quickly swat it away

Him: A hickey.

Him: It's Reece is he back ?

I nod

Him: You guys sorted things out

Me: Sort of.

Him: You not happy though

Me: I'm thinking about Anele

Him: Reece handled him,he did well.

I rolled my eyes at him

Me: You'd make a great addition to his family  
you know

Him: I'm flattered but really ?. Reece is a model  
and what am I compared to him

I rolled my eyes ,sighing.

.....

After school

Right when I was getting out of my last class I  
got a call from Zane

I picked

Me: Ohh what a nice surprise,where's Khayone ?

He chuckled

Him: You got to let me speak first,what if I'm

calling you for an emergency situation and you still asking me about my baby

Me: I miss him

He sighs.

Him: Oh god. Whatever I'm saying right now doesn't matter,I could be dying

Me: But You still talking to me,now uphi ?

Him: Grannies house and I'm here to pick you up

As I stood outside the school gate. I looked around standing on my tiptoes so I could at least see past these tall heads

I spotted him inside his car and I headed towards him

I got in

Greeting him properly

Him: Reece sent me to get you and take you to his house

Me: Why ?

He shrugged

Me: He's not planning on killing me is he ?

Him: What did you do ?

I shrugged

Him: I can assure you,he won't.

Reece was in his gym

I stood for a couple of minutes as I watched him hit the huge leather bag ,I think it was even bigger than me.He wasn't wearing boxing gloves now how does he do it ?

His toned chest covered in sweat then his messy hair still he looked gorgeous.

When he came towards me,I took a few cautious steps back. He got aware of the move and stood were he was

Him: Princess,How was school ?

I shrugged not answering him.

Him: I missed you so I thought I'd get Zane to pick you up since I

I snorted and he paid no attention to it and continued ..

Him: I made your favourite snack and m-

Me: Don't you think its a little bit late for you to act thee perfect boyfriend

He sighs

Him: So you accepted I'd never be perfect and went out to find the perfect guy Anele hu ?what makes you think its okay and I'm gonna be okay with you dating someone from my gang ?

I shrugged

Me: You dumped me,remember? Now you can't tell me who and who not to date. Just like I don't tell you who not to fuck,I mean Thembisa

is also in your gang remember. ?

Him: Are you always going to remind me about that everytime we argue ?,way to go to prove your childshness infact I'm so tempted to strip you off that uniform maybe then we gonna have a conversation.

I shrugged

Me: Do whatever. You do as you please with me right ? I'm your puppet just pull the strings Reece,you the boss eh ?

I stared at him.

He came towards me and I stood my ground,he took me by my hand and I followed him into his room sitting down next to him.

Me: Why do you think think its okay for you to come and go as you please in my life ? Do you know how much you hurt me

Him: I can only imagine,but I thought I was doing the right thing and now that I realized it



wasn't working ,that I couldn't stay away . I came back,for you.

Me: You came back and found me with someone else,trying to move on

Him: You were' trying'

Me : Does it matter ? You could have atleast respected me. Give me time to make my own decision,to decide what I wanted to do with him.

Him: I would have killed him either way anyway.

Me: That's the only way you know how to fix your problems.

Him: That's not the only way,I mean I haven't killed you

Me: What did you do to him

Him: Why does it matter

Me: I care about him just like he does for me and I L-

He pointed at me with his long finger before I

could finish

Him: I dare you to finish that. I swear Ndizok' xhoma ngeenyawo intloko ijonge ezantsi on that balcony.

I kept quiet. Well I still like Anele

Him: Who the fuck does he think he is to have the guts to take what his boss had ?,If I let him him go what message am I giving to my gang members ? 'go ahead you welcome to try your luck with my(pointing at his chest) girl ' Thee Fucken LEADERS girl '. I'll blow his brains and I'll do it my self. He can't fucken mess with what's mine, doesn't matter if we were in a break up or not.

[11/09, 17:15] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 69

We lay in awkwardness,neither of us exchanging word with the other

I had my back to him wrapped around in a

blanket while he lay on his back his arms under  
his head facing the ceiling

He cleared his throat

Him: Alona

I suck in my breath

Me: I know, this was a mistake . It shouldn't  
have happened especially now that we're not  
together. You don't have to say it.

I said in one breath, it hurt saying it.

I was about to get up but he held me back,  
holding me from behind while he had me to his  
chest

Him: Nothing, Nothing is ever a mistake  
between us. Whatever happens, the only  
mistake I know was me breaking up with you. I  
know I thought I was doing it for us, for you but  
I was mistaken.

He sighed, running his hand through his hair.

Him: I know I'm an Asshole,as you nicely like to put it. Well this Asshole loves you and I don't ever want to let you go ,it do me bad like it did in this whole month.Worst month of my life.

He pecks my cheek,nuzzling his face on my hair inhaling me.

"Damn I Fucken missed you"

I heard him mumble.

I missed you too.

Him: I'm really sorry Princess.

.....

Monday morning

I woke up early and now I had time to Here I was about to drink a cup of coffee, engulfed in my own thoughts that I didn't hear Oz enter and come up right behind me

Him: BANG!

Almost jumping out of my sit I turn to glare at

him as I have burned my self with the coffee,Quickly putting the cup down

Me: Yerr Oz !

He chuckles

Taking the cup to his hand,he takes a sip and his face immediately turned into of distaste

Quickly Masking it,he looks at me

Him: It tastes great

Me: I'm sure it does,you can have it

Him: No it's cool,I feel like drinking something more stronger than it

He says pushing the cup my way.

I gladly take it and take a sip,ready for the warm liquid to make it's way down my throat to warm up my tummy

But it doesn't,Now seriously jumping off my chair I go take it out of my mouth

I hear Him laugh at the background but I'm too

occupied by getting the taste out of my mouth

Him: You actually put some type spice in there

Me: Then why didn't you tell me ?

Him: Its me you talking to,Remember ? for all I know I'd kill a rat and stuff it under your pillow and I wouldn't tell you

till I get to to see the priceless moment ..just like this moment,you should have seen your face.

He says continuing to laugh

I sigh

Me: Can you drive me to school ?

Him: Sure lets go

He said taking his car keys from the row of many other

Me: Khayo nxiba

I said as I looked at his bare covered in tattoos chest and grey gutter track pants

He shook his head.

I might stand here all arguing with him back at  
forth till I forget that I'm s

After Oz drove me to school,I found Romeo  
waiting for me at the gate

Him: Your brother

He said biting his lower lip,I smacked him at the  
back of his head

He whined

Him: Hey

Me: Don't even think about it.

Him: Still doesn't give you the right to  
manhandle me

I looked at him for a moment then burst out  
laughing

Me: You're so dramatic

Him: I know.So how was your weekend ?

Me: Nothing much.yours ?

Him: Same old,nothing much when you're glowing and you've got (pulling my scarf down)

I quickly swat it away

Him: A hickey.

Him: It's Reece is he back ?

I nod

Him: You guys sorted things out

Me: Sort of.

Him: You not happy though

Me: I'm thinking about Anele

Him: Reece handled him,he did well.

I rolled my eyes at him

Me: You'd make a great addition to his family you know

Him: I'm flattered but really ?. Reece is a model and what am I compared to him



I rolled my eyes ,sighing.

.....

After school

Right when I was getting out of my last class I got a call from Zane

I picked

Me: Ohh what a nice surprise,where's Khayone ?

He chuckled

Him: You got to let me speak first,what if I'm calling you for an emergency situation and you still asking me about my baby

Me: I miss him

He sighs.

Him: Oh god. Whatever I'm saying right now doesn't matter,I could be dying

Me: But You still talking to me,now uphi ?

Him: Grannies house and I'm here to pick you

up

As I stood outside the school gate. I looked around standing on my tiptoes so I could at least see past these tall heads

I spotted him inside his car and I headed towards him

I got in

Greeting him properly

Him: Reece sent me to get you and take you to his house

Me: Why ?

He shrugged

Me: He's not planning on killing me is he ?

Him: What did you do ?

I shrugged

Him: I can assure you,he won't.

Reece was in his gym

I stood for a couple of minutes as I watched him hit the huge leather bag ,I think it was even bigger than me.He wasn't wearing boxing gloves now how does he do it ?

His toned chest covered in sweat then his messy hair still he looked gorgeous.

When he came towards me,I took a few cautious steps back. He got aware of the move and stood where he was

Him: Princess,How was school ?

I shrugged not answering him.

Him: I missed you so I thought I'd get Zane to pick you up since I

I snorted and he paid no attention to it and continued ..

Him: I made your favourite snack and m-

Me: Don't you think its a little bit late for you to act thee perfect boyfriend

He sighs

Him: So you accepted I'd never be perfect and went out to find the perfect guy Anele hu ?what makes you think its okay and I'm gonna be okay with you dating someone from my gang ?

I shrugged

Me: You dumped me,remember? Now you can't tell me who and who not to date. Just like I don't tell you who not to fuck,I mean Thembisa is also in your gang remember. ?

Him: Are you always going to remind me about that everytime we argue ?,way to go to prove your childshness infact I'm so tempted to strip you off that uniform maybe then we gonna have a conversation.

I shrugged

Me: Do whatever. You do as you please with me

right ? I'm your puppet just pull the strings  
Reece,you the boss eh ?

I stared at him.

He came towards me and I stood my ground,he took me by my hand and I followed him into his room sitting down next to him.

Me: Why do you think think its okay for you to come and go as you please in my life ? Do you know how much you hurt me

Him: I can only imagine,but I thought I was doing the right thing and now that I realized it wasn't working ,that I couldn't stay away . I came back,for you.

Me: You came back and found me with someone else,trying to move on

Him: You were' trying'

Me : Does it matter ? You could have atleast respected me. Give me time to make my own decision,to decide what I wanted to do with him.

Him: I would have killed him either way anyway.

Me: That's the only way you know how to fix your problems.

Him: That's not the only way, I mean I haven't killed you

Me: What did you do to him

Him: Why does it matter

Me: I care about him just like he does for me and I L-

He pointed at me with his long finger before I could finish

Him: I dare you to finish that. I swear Ndizok' xhoma ngeenyawo intloko ijonge ezantsi on that balcony.

I kept quiet. Well I still like Anele

Him: Who the fuck does he think he is to have the guts to take what his boss had ?, If I let him him go what message am I giving to my gang

members ? 'go ahead you welcome to try your luck with my(pointing at his chest) girl ' Thee Fucken LEADERS girl '. I'll blow his brains and I'll do it my self. He can't fucken mess with what's mine, doesn't matter if we were in a break up or not.

[11/09, 17:15] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 70

Still at Reece's house

When he got back from the bathroom

He had a towel wrapped around his waist

I sat at the edge of the bed

He sat down next to my side,sighing

He placed me on his lap, making me face him  
with my legs on either side

With the back of his hand, he too wipes the  
tears

Him: I'm sorry. I understand what you mean and  
I understand how my behaviour might have  
come across as uncaring and inconsiderate.

I nod.

He pecks my lips then goes down to my neck  
and next thing I know

He's unbuttoning my shirt

I put my hands on his to pull them off

I watched as he frowned

Me: I need to get home, it's pretty late

Him: A quickie ?

He asked snaking his hand under my skirt on  
either side of my thigh

I shook my head



Him: Okay.

I got up from him and went to make myself look proper in the bathroom before going out

Reece was already out and he took my bag with

I found him in his kitchen making sandwiches,avocado sandwhiches to be specefic

Me: I thought you had already made me a snack

Him: Zane snatched them on his way out.

He said filling the sandwich with cold meat, cheese and a few other things

It looked great and when he was done

He slid the plate towards me,I took it and the bottle of water on the side before making my way out on his car.

.....

Following day

I was in my room studying for a paper I was going to write tomorrow after I came back from school a little bit too early.

My brother wasn't home.

I heard the my door open before it shut closed someone entering

Me: Ozzie,Please . I don't need you to bug me right now

I said not looking up from my sheet

"Ozzie eh ?.Princess "

Me: Reece. What are you doing here ?

Him: I missed you

Me: Reece you always see me

Him: Well ,I still miss you

He said laying down on his stomach beside me.

Me: I need you to be quite,just 30 minutes clean.

I said and he nod

He lay on his side and it wasn't a couple of minutes before I felt his hand creeping up my back to pull the clip of my bra off.

I shrugged him off glaring at him.

He played with my hair putting it at the back off my ear so he could see my face clearly and it wouldn't disturb me, thoughtful of him until he decided to pull it all in the front

I sighed

Pushing it back and putting ..

Him: Awu serious (i) nje

He said taking the answer sheet from me analysing it for a minute before he took my pencil and scribbled on the paper

When I took it, he had answered all the sums

He did it easily and effortlessly making me feel dumb a little

I jumped on him hugging the living daylights as

we both rolled over on the other side of the bed, making him fall first and me on top.

..

He showed me how to do them.

Me: You're a genius

I said kissing his cheek.

Him: I was home schooled all my life

Me: Figures, You never went to a normal school ?

He shook his head.

I was packing away my books when we were done

Him: Ahh Princess ..

He trailed off

Him: I need you to do me a favour.

I nod

Me: Okay.

Him: Don't freak out.

I nod again

He took me by my hands pulling me to stand in between.

Him: I need you to do me a delivery.

I arched my eyebrows up in confusion

Me: What delivery ?.

Him: Deliver a bag to a guy and he also gives you a bag then you done.

Me: Bag with what ?

Him: You give him a bag with Elbow then he gives you a bag with money.

Me: What's Elbow ?

He pauses for a minute,scratching the back of his neck

Him: A couple pounds of drugs

[11/10, 07:14] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 71

Love

Is it love that is blind or it makes you blind ?

I don't know, but here I was

Reece picked me up after school and drove to his house

I was still in my school uniform and Reece said it was better that way. He had given me a medium sized black spots and inside was the white powder

I was shaking, scared. I don't know how he got me to do this.

I was on my way to the given destination to meet the "client"

The bag felt heavy on my shoulder, it wasn't

really heavy . Bendi' tyiwa si sazela it's like as I walked in the mall every one's eyes were focused on it.

Take a deep breath.

You're just a school girl coming from a practice after school. you're tired and hungry and now you grabbing something to eat.

I got to the restaurant place

Gulping nervously as I looked around for a guy in a suit,black suit to be specific

The were alot if guys dressed in a suit though.

Okay, Lightest shade of grey tie

He's white.

Dark hair ,Blue eyes. Body weight i-

Oh there he is.

I spotted him sitting alone at a table,stirring a cup of coffee I assume.

I headed to where he was.

Sitting down.

I settled the bag down next to me and greeted the guy

He looked at me as if trying to figure me out.

It was a brief meeting with me handing over the bag and taking the one he brought with me.

I ordered and when it came I left with it heading to Reece's house

On my way I couldn't shake the feeling that I know the guy.

.....

Opening the door ,The bastard was with his friends

All gathered together at the lounge drinking

I took the heavy bag on my shoulder and went to place it at the table in the middle of the room.

I opened it taking and dumping the of money on the table,it was a lot and my eyes almost



bulge out.

I watched all of them all their mouths agape

Don't get this wrong

It wasn't because of the money,they've probably seen alot more than this. It was because I was able to pull this and came this far.

I went upstairs ,going to Reece's room to get my bag

I bumped into Reece while getting out of his room

I attempted to pass him but he took my hand . Snatching it away

Me: Ndiyeke (Leave me alone)

I said shoving him by his chest to get away from me but he put his hands on either side of my face. Leaning forward and kissing me

Right then and there I forgot I was supposed to be mad at him for making me do it

He didn't force me or anything,it was my choice  
But still it was his plan.

Him: I love you

Aww

Me: You don't do what you do to someone you  
love.No sane relationshi-

Him: You can't compare our relationship to  
others,you and I we unique.

I sighed,I was tired and annoyed

Him: Are you fine ?

I nod

Him: You sure ?. He didn't say anything to scare  
you or m-

Me: Reece I'm fine I just want to go home

Him: You mad at me ?

Me: Not really.

Him: I'm sorry.

Me: Sure.

He took my school bag from me and followed behind as we made our way downstairs.

Passing by the guys, the money was still there

It was silent as I made my way towards it.

I took a stack and made my way out

I wanted to know what Reece was gonna say nor do but surprisingly he say nothing

He drove me home and when he parked outside my brothers house I was about to get out when he spoke up

Him: Yisapha Alona (Give it back)

Me: Andifuni. (I don't want to)

Him: I'm sure you don't want it, considering where it came from and for what.

Me: I don't care. My hands are already dirty anyway.

Him: Uzayi thini ? Iyak' sinda nok sinda in your

small hands. (What are you going to do with it?)

Me: Shopping

Him: I'll give you my cards

I reached my hand out to him

He searched his pocket,taking out his wallet

Him: I don't really shop here for clothes,these are foreign.

Me: I'm sure you have the one where you have your money all in it

He placed it on the palm of my hand,looking at it and grinning

He called out his pin. I perked his cheek and got out of the car

.....

Saturday morning

We decided to go out shopping with Romeo since I had the card with me and I was more than happy to use it.

When I was done getting ready.

I was on my way out

Oz: Where you going

Me: Mall.

Oz: Shopping for clothes?

I nod

Him: Do you need money or something ?

Me: I'm sorted,going to use just a little bit of my savings

I lied

Him: Okay

Me: You can drive me there.

..

..

I met up with Romeo at the entrance.

We went crazy and started going in and out of the stores

We were even going to the ones we usually pass because they too expensive and you usually get just a top with all your 6 months saving.

I had the card and I was planning on using all the money till it runs out.

1700 deducted

600 deducted

350 deducted

Reece probably got a message somewhere along those lines everytime I swiped with his card.

He must be fuming.

We spent half the day there,getting our nails done for the first time

Going to the spa for a massage,since we

needed it you know just to Relieve grade 12 stress

Our hair done,Ate at this Chinese restaurant

We did alot of things with the card and I thought by now the money would have ran out but no.

This card was limitless

We really enjoyed the day and we'd never forget it. It was the best.

Later. I had to get a cab to drive me to Reece's house

I had alot of bags ,heck I can't even remember some of the things I got

When I got there.

The cab driver was gentle man enough to go back and forth taking my bags all inside while I waited outside with the others

I thanked him and went on in with the last two

bags

Reece was alone occupied with his laptop

When I looked at his facial expression,he was his usual serious self. His jaw twitching ever so slightly.

He was calm.

I sat down next to him

Resting my head on the arm rest and my feet up on top of his lap.

I sighed tiredly

[11/10, 07:15] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 72

I sat down next to him

Resting my head on the arm rest and my feet up on top of his lap.

I sighed tiredly



Him: You even got your nails done.

I showed him my hands,grinning.

They were really nice

He looked at me after looking at them

Putting his laptop aside.

He turned to me

Him: I want to see your natural nails,now

Me: I just got these done.

Him: So ? Come on. Do it

I shook my head.

Him: I'll do it myself

He said taking my hand and I tried pulling it back but it was almost impossible

He started picking on my fingers,redoing all the nails I had planted

He was done later,leaving my nails with pieces of glue

Him: See. Now that's more like you.

He said kissing the back of my hand.

I furiously crossed my arms to my chest.

Him: So. Did you have fun ?

I nod

Him: And You spent alot.

He stated matter of fact

Me: Couldn't resist,Worse the card was limit less. Ha! If you could have seen the look on peoples faces when I take the card out. That card is magic,It was swipe - after swipe,swipe after sw-

I stopped mid sentence as he glared at me.

Him: Then it was message after message. You sure spent alot,remind me not to ever give you my card again. Now give it back.

I shook my head

Him: Alona

Me: Can't I keep it ?

Him: No !

Me: Please ?

Him: No Alona

Me: Mxm,Ina.

I said giving him the card.

Me: I need space for these,in your closet

I motioned to plastic bags

Him: Why you keeping them here ?

The reason I was keeping them here was because i didn't want my brother asking me questions.

Me: Why not ? You want your whores to c-

He quickly kisses me shutting me from saying anything that'll lead me into throwing a fit and

end up arguing

Him: You more than welcome to keep them here, I don't mind. I'll get someone to put them for you.

Me: Thank you.

I said pecking his lips

Me: Now I need to go home

Him: It's still early

Me: I'm tired

Him: You can sleep here

Me: You won't wake me up and you know by the time I wake up it would be late.

He grinned.

Him: Okay. Just a few minutes with me. Maybe you can wear the things you bought and let me see. Maybe you can start by wearing a lingerie

I glared at him

Me: Why would I even buy that.

Him: Because you got a man ..

He trailed off,I looked at him persuading him with my eyes to convince me more.

He sighed

Him: You didn't even get a sexy number,sleep wear ?

I shook my head.

Me: I got those cotton sleeping jump suits ,its pink has these tiny ears on top

Him: That's one of the things you got with the card ?

I nod

He chuckles,getting up

He drags me with to the kitchen so I could help him cook.

I sat on the kitchen bar and watched him as he stirred

Me: Why aren't you wearing a shirt

Him: Am I distracting you ?

He asked wiggling his eyebrows

Me: Maybe, and maybe your tattoos are also distracting

Him: What about them

Me: You have a lot

He shrugged.

Him: I first had one when I was fourteen Me:  
Fourteen ? At that time I knew nothing about  
tattoos, I still played dolls with my friends

Him: And I was out going to dealings. Age  
fourteen I made my first kill and my father was  
so proud that he took me to have a tattoo

Me: Did you want to ? Did you want it

He shook his head

Him: I was forced to do both and I had no say.

Me: Where was your brother in all of this, I mean he was the eldest maybe he could have protected you

He snorted

Him: He couldn't even if he tried, He ran away from home and chose to live with grandma. Atleast there he was safer from that bastard. I also tried to escape unfortunately I didn't make it. He caught me, dragged me to the basement where he hit me and tortured me on some machine before locking me up there for the whole week to starve.

Me: Your mom ?

Him: She knew better than to stand up to him, everyone knew better . That shit was Awful.

Me: I'm sorry

Him: It's water under the bridge now, don't worry love.

He tried to laugh, hiding his emotions

He came to stand in between my legs,wrapping his arms around my waist and resting his chin on my shoulder

I ran my hand through his hair

Me: Reece

"Mhh"

He was falling asleep on me

Me: Why is your hair soft and curly ? I mean it's almost impossible for a Xhosa t-.

Him: Who said I'm Xhosa?

I shrugged.

Me: I figured.

Him: My mom has a xhosa background but she's not really xhosa, And me ? I'm just a mixed race. I'll tell you about it some other t-

Me: I think your pot is burning.

He turned around and I heard him cuss under his breath.



.....

Some other day.

I was in the middle of making dinner and my brother was watching TV in the sitting room alone.

When I have dished out for the both of us I went with the plates

I handed him his and was about to seat down when there was a knock at the door .

I heard Oz grumble something

Him: I thought god had my back. Why let a visitor come right when I'm about to eat.

Opening the door

My eyes met his

It was the White guy I had delivered the bag to a couple days ago.

What the heck does he want here ?

I swallowed nervously

Me: What do you want ?

"Whose there ?" I heard my brother shout out in the back

But I was too stunned to answer

Guy: Your father.

This is so fucken cliché it's not even funny right now.

[11/10, 07:15] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 73

I stood there, too stunned to say nor do something

Suddenly My brother was beside me I

Him: What are you doing here ?

He asked,gritting through his teeth.

The guy Tsk(ed)

Guy: That's no way to greet your old man,Son.  
I'm here to see my children,specifically you  
( looking at me) my daughter.

Huh ?

Oz: We had an agreement,you were meant to  
stay away

Guy: I agreed but I wouldn't have if I really knew  
the real reason you and your mom wanted me  
to.

He said, now looking at me.

I looked at my brother as he looked at me with  
the corner of his eye

Oz: Alona go to your room

Me: No

Oz: Alona.

I shook my head,if he wanted to say something

he should say it in front of me

This also involves me so I wanted to know what going on

Guy: Aren't you going to welcome your father in

Oz: You not welcome here

But he was halfway in anyway, looking around and nodding in ..Approval

Guy: You've done well for yourself, Son.

He said, making the word 'son' more clear as if he was taunting him somehow.

Him: My Beautiful daughter

He said trying to touch my cheek but Oz immediately stopped him

Oz: Don't you dare touch her.

Guy: And who are you to tell me where to get off ?, I'm her father

Oz snorted

Oz: A father you are.

He said sarcastically.

Me: Oz,what's going on here ?

I asked,speaking for the first time since he arrived here

Guy: Tell her,Tell her what you and your mother did.

Oz glared at him

Guy: I'll tell her. You see ,Your brother here and your mother. Decided it would be best to keep us apart,to cut me off your life completely and act like I never existed, I don't know which

Me: Why would you do that ?

I whispered as i looked at Oz

Oz: You won't understand-,we wanted to protect you

Guy: Protect her from what ? Her own father,how pathetic.

Oz: Just shut up

Guy: Don't forget who you talking to

Oz: Who am I talking to. ? You don't fucken tell me -

Me: I need an explanation not to be in the middle of an argument right now .

..

..

Saturday morning

In the middle of a phone call with Reece

Me: You made me deliver drugs to my own father.

Him: I didn't know.

Me: You didn't know ? You know what I think ,I think you planned this whole thing

Him: Why would I ?

Me: You have a messed up relationship with your father now you want to ruin mine also.

Him: Really Alona ?, you think I'd do that to you  
Sighing in frustration

Me: I'm sorry. Its just that I'm stressed by this whole thing and -

Him: Fine. I get it

Him: How are you holding up ?

Me: Not so great right now.

Me: They lied to me,all my life they let me believe any scenarios I made about my father while they knew well he existed just that he didn't know I existed,they pushed him away from me

Him: That sucks, but I'm sure they had their reasons

Me: To protect me

I rolled my eyes

Him: Your father..is one of the dangerous guys Alona. He's in the game

Me: Just like you, Just like my brother and accepted it just fine and I would have done the same to him, if only they had given me a chance to know him.

Him: You don't understand

Me: Why do you all keep saying that

Him: Just be careful.

Me: You know him well ?

Him: No, But i do know he's one greedy fuc-Man. Can you pass the phone to your brother

Me: No. I don't even want to see him

Him: Alona, just do it for me



Me: Caba utheni wena.

Him: You love me.

Me: Fine.

I went to his room,he was in the process of getting up

I handed him the phone and went out heading to the kitchen to make myself breakfast

On Saturdays I usually make English breakfast for my brother and I ,just a change of scenery because we have cereal through the whole week .

Now since I was still mad at him,I wasn't going to do anything

I made the bowl of cereal and right then when I was about to sit down I heard the notification sound.

After checking, I went to open the door and in came .. My father

Him: A lovely morning and worse when I'm seeing my sunshine.

He said kissing my forehead.

Okay.

Him: I was hoping we could go grab a coffee so that we can catch up and get to know each other

Me: It would take more than one cup of coffee to catch up about all you've missed in my life

Him: I know, and I'm willing to take you out each and every day, to spend all the time I can get with you and that's only if you agree.

I nod

Me: Okay. Let me go freshen up then we can go.

[11/10, 07:16] ☎ +263 77 250 3508 ☎ : Insert 74

Afternoon I was home after going out with my father.

Him: Where were you ? Umka njani unga xelanga uba uyaphi Alona ?(How do you go out without letting me know)

Me: I'm here now

I shrugged

Walking away from him when he grabs me by my arm and turns me to look at him

Him: Don't you dare give me attitude. I know what I did was wrong but it doesn't give you the right to act the way you act now

Me: Ndiyeye ! (Leave me alone)

I said trashing from his hold

He lashed me by my hair back and slapped me

Him: Ucimb' uthetha naba Alona.

He asked gritting through his teeth as he looked down at me, he still had my hair fisted and the look he gave me right now scares me shit

I started crying,that's the only way I could

escape this situation

He let go of me and I sprinted off to my room.

I spent most of the day locked up in my room.

Later that day

Mom decided to visit, currently at the lounge with both of them.

Mom: Baby we sorry.

She said trying to take my hand in hers but I moved it away.

Oz: There's nothing wrong we did, we were trying to protect her and the least she could do is to thank us and stop being a little spoilt, ungrateful brat

He spit out venomously

I rolled my eyes. Which is something I shouldn't have done in this situation, I could have gotten away with it if it was any other day but not today

because the next thing I know I'm slapped once again

It happened in a blur. I mean I didn't see when he got to me

Me: Hit me all you want but it won't stop me from wanting to build a relationship with my father

I said hiccupping as I was crying

He snorted.

Him: Some father you have, I would think twice before doing anything with that shit

Mom: Ozamokuhle!

She tried stopping him

Him: No mom. She needs to know the truth, about her 'father' . Did he tell you that he is dealing with all sorts of crime. Arms smuggling, Human trafficking and owns a club where he signs in and manipulate young girls into prostitution did he tell you h-

Mom: OZAMOKUHLE !

Him: Did he fucken tell you that he for- he Raped mom then kwa' bakho wena ?

I shook my head in disbelief of what I'm hearing, Tears blurred my vision

Him: He would have made money out of you. You're girl child after all and he would have used you. He would have gambled with you, that's how cruel and greedy he can be, Actually he's far worse than that and I'm sure you don't want to know, To know that your father made a plan out for you even before you were born, how disappointed he was that I was a boy an-

Mom cut him off again and this time around he shut his mouth.

I was a sobbing mess and somewhere in I couldn't handle the new found information

I started having trouble breathing and I fisted my shirt on the side chest, it felt like it was

closing on me or something was blocking me from releasing air

I started heaving

Mom: Iza na manzi

He sprinted to the kitchen and came back with a glass.

I took a cautious sip cause I knew for a fact if I drank hurriedly I'd be blocked even more

I closed my eyes for a moment trying to gather myself but it was almost impossible.

I got up but fell down again as darkness consumed me.

.....

It was the following day when I woke up,Monday

I was supposed to be at school but seeing the time beside me right now I was late.

I sat up in a sitting position and placed a pillow

on the back of my head.

I was engulfed in my thoughts

My mom came in later on

She tried to get me to speak but I didn't want to so she left and in came mu brother

Him: Alona.

His voice was so soft

I turned my back to him and looked the other side.

Him: Mntase

Silence

Him: I'm sorry.

He came to apologize and I ignored him the whole time he tried getting me to speak.

Came afternoon and I went to bath,when I was done.



I called Romeo and he was still stuck in school for afternoon class so I ended up calling Reece to come pick me up.

I just wanted to be away from home right now . He was at work but he was going to pick me up.

I was bored to death, Reece made me watch tv while he was clicking away on his laptop finishing off work

We were currently in his office at his work.

Me: Reece.

Him: Alona.

He replied not looking at me

Me: I'm bored.

Him: I'm almost done.

Me: You've been saying that for the past hour.

I mumbled.

With a few clicks,He sighed

Him: There,done. I'm all yours.

He said coming towards me and making himself comfortable beside me

Him: I'm tired

He sighed,glancing at me up close for the first time

Him: What happened to your cheek ?

He asked grazing the tip of his fingers on my cheek,I winced.

Me: Ozzie.

Him: You guys got in an argument or something or it was just your hot tempered attitude

I shrugged

Me: Both,Also has Something to do with my father.

Him: I knew it would get somewhere there,you know you - not really getting along with your

family

Me: You can't actually blame me for the way I'm reacting to all this.

Him: No I don't, and I know You don't want to listen,Alona. Listen to them,their reasons. You know I would have done the same to protect my little sister.

Me: So you knew about this ?

I asked staring at him

Him: Your brother and I have been close,since we were little our fathers were sort of friends,we got to know each other through them. We pretty much know about our Fucked up lives. And Alona,it wasn't my place to tell you what kind of a man your father is,and No I didn't know he was the client you were delivering the bag to.

I nod.

Me: This is stressful, I don't know how to handle

this and yesterday I had a break down.

Him: You'll get through it, You'll decide what to do with your father.

He said getting up after pecking my cheek, he sorted his stuff and then when he was done we went out

Passing by open box office's, everyone was looking at us that I started feeling self conscious

I know I was under dressed for this place but oh well I didn't know I was going to come here

Oh maybe they were Wondering why their handsome and well dressed Abercrombie model of a boss is doing with someone like me

Oh well.

Reece drove to his house and we stayed in the rest of the day and then I went home later.

Mom was still around and when I arrived they were about to eat dinner.

I passed them and went up to my room.

NOT EDITED.

[11/10, 07:16] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 75

Right when I was deciding to give my father a chance to be in my life,he went MIA on me

I was depressed okay not really,but I was somewhere there.

I eventually forgave my family for what they did,staying with hatred and anger ,betrayal directed at them would not help me in any way . They were the only people I had and they would always be there for me no matter what.

.....

It was one of those days where I was chilling with my brother in the swimming pool

It was hot outside.

Him: Have you decided which university you want to go to ?

I nod

Him: I was thinking of sending you to study abroad.

I turned so quick to look at him I was surprised I didn't get a whiplash

Me: Why would you do that

Him: Why wouldn't I ?, don't you think it be good for change ?

Me: My whole life is here, Xa kwindawo endinga yaziyo uthi ndithini ?

Him: You don't actually have to know a place and it's people to start over, for a fresh start

Me: Why do I need a fresh start ?

Him: With all that has been going on, you just

need to get away from everything,have a break from the drama.

I shrugged,not seeing the point if thus conversation or why it was important

Me: I think I'm perfectly fine here

Him: You know there are a lot of people who would die for this opportunity

Me: I'm not one of those people then.

He sighed

Me: Why are you so keen to send me away ?

Him: I'm not sending you away Alona,I thought you'd be.. to experience the lifestyle there .

.....

End of the year

I was already accepted in the University of cape town. I was doing a 3 years course there and stayed on an apartment near campus,Romeo was here with me but doing different course.

I so struggled in convincing my mom and brother to let me stay on the apartment.

"Oh you so young we fear for you"

They have to let me go and be my own person,make mistakes and learn from them, To be independent.

Anyway,it's not like I'm far away from home it's maybe 2 or 3 hours I.

So yeah I was living With romeo and we shared the rent on half so it was manageable.

Reece and I,we didn't see alot of each other. Due to me being cramped with work and the distance,maybe.

We'd call each other though every now and then

I was heading to my 08:30 class all by myself.Romeo was still fast asleep,his class started at 10 anyway



See one if the things I like about being in university so far.

You never had to rush anything

On my way,my phone started ringing.

I picked up..

Him: Princess

Me: Reece

Him: How you doin ?

Me: Noy okay

Him: What is it ? If there's someone who's messing with you t-

Me: Reece calm down,there's no one messing with me. I'm just missing you

He sighs in relief

Him: I know and I miss you too, And my Sweet pumpkin down there.

I giggle.

Me: You pervert, on a serious note though Reece why don't you drive here, I mean it's not even far.

Him: I'd love to. but princess i-

Me: You busy, it's fine I understand.

Him: You mad ?

I shook my head, remembering that he can't see me

Me: No. Look I need to get in class.

I said as I hung up not waiting for him to answer as I got inside the classroom.

It was Friday evening when I was just lazing around, I had nothing better to do since my school work was up to date. I was not in the mood to study.

It was then when Romeo entered the room

Him: There's someone for you outside

He said with a mischievous grin

And before I could ask who,he dashed to his room

I wore my sleepers and went outside

Parked on the driveway was Reece's car

I picked up on my pace so eager to get to him.

Suddenly I was in the mood

..

..

He drove to his house and we wasted no time in chit chatting we had a steamy session,if you know what I mean.

After.

He was taking a shower while I sat on the bed with a tub of ice cream

I would have joined him but I was too tired to move.

I'm going in later.

His phone that was on the night stand started ringing, I let it and thought the person will leave a message and he'll get back. Then it got irritating because the person wasn't giving up I rolled on the other side and took it.

I could feel my blood boil as I read the contact  
Right then Reece got out of the bathroom

Him: Whose that ?

He asked heading towards me

He had a towel wrapped around his waist and he sat down beside me.

Me: Thenjiswa

I turned to stare at him for any reaction.

Him: Oh.

That's all he said

I got up and was to headed to the bathroom when his hand clasped firmly around my arm to pull me back.

I tried to get his hand off but he wouldn't budge.

He sat me on his lap and turned my face to look at him.

Him: Akhonto yenzekayo phakathi Kwam naye Alona (There's nothing going on between us)

Me: Why is she calling then !?

Him: Sungxola maarn Alona,she probably calling about gang related stuff.

I sighed

Him: Just trust me.

Me: Okay.

He smiled slightly at me before he pecked my lips,turned into a full blown kiss ..

You know what happens next

[11/10, 07:19] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 76

Note: All the events that will follow happened when I was doing my third year in university

It was Saturday after I spent the night with Reece last night after he refused to drive me to the apartment.

Luckily I had no classes this day.

When I woke up he wasn't next to me

I got up and went to do my morning routine in the bathroom before going to look for him

He was in his office with Zane in the middle of a discussion.

Reece: What did that Whore Fucken tell you ?

Zane: She may have told me that you are giving her until Friday to give in to your demands if not her life will be more of a hell. That you will hurt

anyone who tries to help her. You can't do this to her after you I-

Right at that moment Reece piped in to stop him from finishing

Him: Princess!

After I greeted Zane. I took small steps towards Reece and sat on his lap as he was sitting on his office chair

Zane: I'll be on my way out

Me: Oh please don't let me stop you from what you two were busy with

Zane: I-

Reece: No ,we are done.

He said giving his brother a stern look.

I heard Zane snort,as he shook his head side to side

Zane: You haven't told her have you ?

Reece: Just go.

He gritted through his teeth.

They had a staring contest before Zane turned to look at me, with a forced smile "I'll see you around, take care"

I nod

With that, he turned to leave.

I looked at Reece and before I could ask what their conversation was about

Him: Lets go eat breakfast.

He got up, carrying me bridal style to his kitchen where we found a steaming hot breakfast and a middle age lady in a maids uniform.

Reece: Mavis.

She did a little bow to Reece, not meeting his eye before she scurried out

Reece sat me on a chair and sat closely

Me: It smells great.

Him: It tastes even more greater.



Me: You didn't tell me you had a maid.

Him: She's not employed full time,I just call her sometimes when I want a homely dish,But I make sure I pay her salary every month even though most of the times I don't call her. She needs the money because she is a widow with 3 kids. I feel sorry for her..

I was quite for a moment as I stared at him

Him: What ?

Me: You have a heart for other people as well not for only me.

I smiled at him.

He cleared his throat

Him: Let's eat before this gets cold.

He said focusing his attention to the food before us.

I poked his dimpled cheek and he swat my hands away,I watched as he furrowed his

eyebrows together in frustration

He always hated it when I did that.

He said his dimples made him look weak, took away some of his manly status and that is why he never smiled often because they always showed.

What he didn't know someone with a close eye could notice them and they appeared nevertheless when he speaks.

Me: Reece

He turns to look at me

Me: What was you and your brother arguing about ?

He pause for a minute

Him: The usual ,gang business.

He shrugs

Me: Why do I have a feeling that you are lying to me ?

Him: I'm not. Princess look,it's too early to be fighting with you also. Can't we just enjoy this

Me: Sure.

I said

Him: Maybe we can chill by the pool after.

Me: I need to get to the apartment.

Him: Are you mad at me ?

Me: Don't I have a reason to be ? You hiding something from me after all .

He bangs the table with his fist.

He gets up abruptly and goes out mumbling "I can't even start a day properly no more"

You know what,I lost appetite for this breakfast.

I got up and went upstairs to take a shower.

Wearing my clothes after I was done,I take my bag and went to his office. I found him standing by the balcony,he had a glass filled with whiskey

He dumped breakfast for it hu.

I knew better than to start on him when he had consumed alcohol.

Me: I'm leaving.

It was an awkward silence before he turned around and said he'll drive me

.....

Afternoon

I was finishing off a project with my chosen partner, Yanga.

It was a guy from my class and NO we both had no romantic intentions with each other. He had his girlfriend and I had Reece.

We Aimed to get higher marks on the project ,we worked well with each other

So every weekend,which was the only days we weren't really busy we did bits of the project.

While my friend was out having and i quote 'fun'

i was here being a nerd as he ever so nicely called me.

After two hours of research

Me: I'm tired and hungry.

I said collapsing on the mat

Me: Worst is that we don't even have grocery,except for the packet of noodles and frozen pies ..you can't really classify those as grocery

Him: Is that all you eat during the week ?,when last did you have a proper meal.

I shrugged

Me: Can't remember. We lazy to do the grocery,we even more lazy to cook.

He Tsk( ed-)

Him: Hold your breath with the frozen pies so long,I'll bring you a plate later for dinner.

Me: You can cook ?

Him: Yeah, Me and my Roommate has turns and today is mine.

Me: I can't wait, Thank you.

He nods as he finished up packing his stuff and I walked him out.

Going to the boring apartment ,I also pack my stuff away and when I'm done I heat two packets of frozen pies and go up to my room.

When I'm done eating,I got bored and I didn't feel like sleeping so I decided to call Reece and he picked up after a couple of seconds

Him: Princess,I'm in the middle of a meeting.

Me: Oh sorry.

I said as I hung up,I sigh

Deciding on calling my brother.

He picked up immediately and before I could say something.

Him: Andina Mali. ( I don't have money)

[11/10, 07:21] +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 77

A few days later

I was at Reece's house after he picked me up from the apartment.

As we sat down in his lounge.

Something was up with him and when I confronted him to tell me what it is he refused,until now.

Him: There's something I need to tell you

Me: What is it.

Him: Regardless of what happens,just know that I love you and that I will always

Me: You starting to freak me out

I chuckled uneasily

He paused for a moment

Sighing, I watch as his hand runs through his hair.

Him: I ..

He looks at me then his eyes roam all over the place

Him: I cheated on you, again. This time around, I impregnated her, she says I impregnated her.

Me : Who is she ?

Silence, He doesn't answer me but I think I already knew the answer.

Me: Then jiswa.

I whisper

He proved me right when he didn't say anything

Me : How could you ? How could you do this to me again, with her ? again. I thought she was out of our lives ! Reece why her ?



Him: I didn't mean for it to happen, it was a stupid mistake

Me: Imagine if this was the other way around, that I got pregnant with another man's baby while I'm with you Reece how would you feel ?

Him: I'm sorry.

Me: YOU SORRY ? SORRY WON'T FIX THINGS RIGHT NOW !

I yelled out to him

Him: I'm not even sure if it's mine, once the baby is born I'll do a DNA test

Me: How far is she ?

He scratches the back of his head

Him: 8 months in a couple of weeks she's due.

Me: You kept this from me all while long ?

I asked, my eyes were getting blurry

Him: I didn't want to hurt you. I just wanted to

make sure when the baby is born then figure out what to do

I shook my head in disbelief.

Me: For someone who claims to love me, you have a funny way of showing it.

I got up and headed to the door and before I could get out he stood in front of it

With a few clicks he locked the door

Him: It's late Alona, I'll drive you tomorrow morning.

There was no use fighting with him right now, I had no strength in me and I knew no matter what I tried he won't let me go

I just wanted to sleep.

I sighed in frustration

Dragging my feet to his room, he was following closely behind

I just stood by the door,glaring at the bed

He's been making me sleep in the same bed he probably been sleeping with her.

I snorted and turned around,glaring at him

Him: I didn't do it on our bed

Me: Like I'd believe anything that comes out of your mouth right now

I said going to a room three doors away from his,which was a spare room.

I got in.

Rooms here were always well taken care off.

I shut the door in his face,taking off the clothes I was wearing and got in bed on my under garments.

As I lay my head on the pillow,I was thinking about my argument with him. I was trying so hard not to cry.

I kept on taking laboured breaths,it's like I had

this huge lump on my throat and every time I swallowed it hurt.

It's like something was squeezing my heart.

I should be numb to pain by now, considering how many times I have been hurt

I should be strong and know that I'll get through it, that it will pass

But nothing hurts more by being hurt by the one you love, no matter how hard I tried to be brave. When it comes to Reece I can't hold it together, I love him.

I don't know when I fell asleep but I was woken up in the middle of the night when I felt someone getting inside the covers.

I jumped up startled but a hand held me back

"It's me"

Me: Reece what are you doing here !?

Him: How can I sleep when I know you all by

yourself in this room,I just want to hold you.  
Please Princess.

Me: Get out.

Him: Alona

Me: No.

Suddenly he was on top of me and he started trailing wet kisses on my neck.

Me: Reece !

He took my leg to place it on the side of his waist while he brushed my side.

He was fast with his hands because it wasn't a couple of seconds passing by when my bra was lost somewhere in the sheets,leaving me with my bare chest

I don't know what it is about him that makes me lose my sense ,he has a way of drawling me in and make me forget about everything

Yes, regardless of the issues lying in between

us waiting to be solved.

We had sex.

I got up the following morning to freshen up and when I got out of the bathroom

Reece had already fixed the bed and he was sitting on the edge with a tray in hand that had breakfast

Me : If you think bringing me a morning breakfast now would make me forget about what you did,think again.

Letting the towel i had around my naked body fall to my feet.

I lotion right in front of him and I could feel his eyes on me,looking at each and every part.

He came to stand behind me and I could feel his arousal

I heard him murmur something.

I left him standing there and went to wear my

clothes before going to catch a cab to drive me to school.

[11/10, 07:23] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 78

Still at Reece's

Just when I opened the main door to get out

I almost bumped into thenjiswa, looking - well more like glaring her up and down

I couldn't help noticing the huge baby bump

She was wearing one of her skimpy dresses that I've always seen her in, I've never seen her in anything decent and right now she was looking even more pathetic, still don't know what Reece sees in her

Me: What do you want. ?

She folded her arms to her chest

Her: Time alone with my 'Baby daddy'

She said making the word more clearer

It stung, but I wasn't going to let her know that she got to me.

I laughed in her face

Me: You found him. ?, I heard you were still looking around.

Her: Reece is the father, no doubts about that

Me: Really, and that Reece lives here ? Sorry honey the only Reece I know is my boyfriend and we shared a special moment yesterday night

She snorted

Her: Fact still remains, him and I will have a strong bond now with the baby on the way. I'll always be on his mind, he'll wife me. I'm the mother of his first born after all

Me: Sorry to burst your bubble but that ain't happening with me still in the picture, I'm not going anywhere. So sorry again your plan didn't



work,you have to come up with something more powerful to take me out,clearly the pregnancy didn't work for you. You'll go back to your whorish life

She opened her mouth and closed it again,lost for words

She looked behind me,Suddenly she started sniffing

She was crying,or pretending to be

Her: Are you going to stand there and let her talk to me like that ?

She asked

I turned to glare at Reece

He just shrugged

Me: Now if you don't mind,you can take your flat ass to wherever the hell you came from. You know,I thought they said pregnant women usually glow (shaking my head in mock pity) which makes me wonder if you really pregnant

or what ? You're just hopeless. Now leave,My man and I want to finish where we left off..if you know what I mean.

I watched her agape mouth,she looked at Reece,then back to me then to Reece again.

She turned on her heel and left.

You know, I would have handled this differently if it was any one else. But she just brings out the worst in me she doesn't deserve my humanity.

I would have come out with a solution,which was Reece supporting the baby and be with him every step of the way.

I know how being raised by a single parent is like,it's not easy as it is on the child and I wouldn't want any child to go through that. With Thenjiswa ,I was tempted to make Reece choose if it would come out that the baby is his.

It was silent as I glared at him.

Him: Prin-

Me: Don't.

I said stopping him.

Me: You better learn to pray,go one on one with god . Pray that you not responsible for the pregnancy,I'm too young for a baby mama drama. I don't need someone like her in my life

If you are responsible,I'm so done with you,in fact I'm done.Until you learn to keep it in your pants,then maybe we can talk into evakalayo.

Him: Heh Alona.

I Ignored him as i made my way out .

.....

Later that day

I was with Romeo in the apartment,in his room finishing off our work while we talked

Him: I met this new guy

Me: That's like..a third one this week

Him: Well this one is different

Me: Just like the other three.

Him: Point is I like him

Me: Like you liked the other th-

He glared at me b

Me: When are you settling down though Rome ?

Him: When I'm 50.

He blurt out

I laughed at that

Him: Or maybe I can,when I meet someone like  
Reece.

My laughter died down

Me: Trust me ,you wouldn't want someone like  
him

He was quite for a moment

Him: What did he do this time. ?

Me: See ?,you already know he messes me up but still you'd want someone like him

Him: Well. Reece is handsome and successful. He's perfect

Me: That's just a facade,he's no where near perfection. The word is not even in his dictionary

Him: Well maybe if you stopped wanting him,well trying to change him into the perfect guy. You wouldn't have had problems in your relationship,really friend you got to stop.

Me: You haven't even heard what he did but you already siding with him,so much for being a best friend

Him: Well I know you,always pushing the guy, Trying to change him into your imaginary perfect guy,you just have to deal with it. Everything he does,deal with it. He is a guy,just

like every guy he does stuff,that he might regret later on.

Me: Romeo,he cheated on me again. With the same girl,again. Worse he got her pregnant,what am I supposed to do ?

He was silent for a minute

Him:Its up to you if you want to leave your man for that skunk or you fight for him,stand behind him and try to support him instead of making up your mind based on anger,you love the guy after all and if you love him that much,you'll stay.

Me: I'm not ready for a baby mama drama,I'm too young for that. Kwanto edibanisa nomntana phofu.

Him: You willing to walk away ?

I shrugged

Me: Romeo I said I'm too young for Uzi xakekisa,I could get out the and mingle and forget about him

Him: You love the guy Alona and you've tried that before and it didn't work.

Me: All he does is hurt me and I always forgive him, he'll never learn to treat me with respect cause he knows that he'll come back to me and apologize and I'll forget about it, Not this time around.

Him: so you breaking up with him ?

I shrugged

Me: I don't know, I'm confused

Him: Because you still love him regardless of what he does, See ? You two were just meant to be. No other guy will take Reece's place in your heart no matter what happens between you two, you just can't even imagine life without him. You want to break up with him, not only will it hurt him it'll hurt you too more than you can imagine. Every relationship has its ups and downs baby it's up to you how to deal with them, either you want to break up with him

,torturing your self for the rest of your life or you fix it together.

Me : He knows I love him that much to not break up with him,that's why he keeps bullshitting me. He knows he has this power over me and that I'll crawl back to him. Not this time,he has to sweat for my forgiveness.

.....

Supposedly Thenjiswa finally gave birth and Reece took it upon himself to do the tests without even giving the baby a few weeks to fully grow.

Fortunately or unfortunately.. The baby wasn't his and I was relieved,but that didn't mean him and I would carry on like nothing happened. I wasn't ready to forgive him yet ,I'll take my time to also make his life miserable.



[11/10, 07:25] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 79

After I had my morning class, which was the only class I had for the day

I had decided to go to Reece's house, to take my all my stuff

I had already texted him and he didn't reply.

Maybe this will also show him how serious I am, after avoiding him for the whole week.

..

..

I went up the stairs to his room

I found him standing by the balcony with a glass filled with whiskey in hand.

I thought I would have found the stuff already packed at the bag waiting for me by the door..

Me: Where's the stuff ?

Him: Wawuzi shiye phi ?

I stared at him

I headed to his walk in closet and I was a foot inside when I heard the door lock behind me

Turning around to see Reece putting the key in his pocket

I stepped back

Me: What do you think you doing ?

He placed the now empty glass on the dresser table

Him: You aren't going out until we fix things

Me: Fix th- ,there's nothing to be fixed.

I said heading inside the closet to take what's mine and try to leave but before I could get in

I felt his hand clasp around my arm to turn me to face him

He leaned forward supposedly to kiss me but I turned my head to the side-

He nibbled my ear,whispering "I miss you"

His hand went up inside my shirt to rub the flesh

Me: Let go off me

I said trying to pull his hand out but it didn't budge.

He pushed me to the bed and put his weight on top of me

Me: Reece get off me

I said panicking,trying to push him off me with my hands both on his chest,with the little strength I had compared to his it was impossible

He placed my arms on either side of my head in a firm grip that I struggled to move them

His hand trailed up my back to unclip my

bra,now feeling on my bare breast

All while long he was kissing me.

I had my face looking at the side and my eyes shut close.

Suddenly he stopped as he got off me.

Him: Open your eyes Alona

I took in a deep breath,only then I noticed I was crying

Him: Alona!

I turned to face him.

Him: Geez ,you didn't really think I was going to force myself into you did you ?

He asked,worry masking his features.

I wiped my wet cheeks with the back of my hand.

Me: You've done it before so what would stop you from doing it again ?

I asked, hiccuping in-between

Him: I'm sorry.

I got up, sneaking the key on my hand

Me: You're an Asshole

I back handed him, quickly running to unlock the door while I left him recovering from shock.

I made it to the main door and right when I opened it to step out. I was pulled back by my hair.

Great day to not tie it up.

Note the sarcasm.

I winced in pain.

Reece had my hair tangled in his fist, he pushed me back and I fell on the couch

He clasped his hands around my throat to choke me, I elbowed the side of his face

And quickly got up, my way to the door was blocked so I ran to the kitchen and Reece was

hot on my tail

I snatched the empty glass that was placed on the counter, I threw it at him but he ducked. It hit the wall and I watched it shatter

I must have lost focus because the next thing I know Reece was in front of me, I saw him through my blurry vision since I was crying, he was pissed

I had never seen the expression on his face right now, it really scared me

He slapped me I screamed out in pain and pure shock, I stumbled backwards and I hit the corner of the wooden table in the middle of the room with the corner of my head right above my right eyebrow

I lay on my side on the floor. He abruptly turned me so that I was facing him, I was waiting for another hit but before it came

"REECE WHAT THE FUCK ARE YOU DOING" I

heard his brothers voice .

He pushed Reece off me.

Reece: You fucken touch me like that again I swear I'll kill you.

He spit out venomously before he left the room and I heard the front door slam shut.

He must have done it with force because the next thing I know I hear the huge glass shutter into pieces as it supposedly fell from its frame.

Zane wet a cloth before coming to place it on the side of my head

Him: Hold it in place

I placed my hand on it

He picked me up and went to put me on the couch.

He dashed upstairs then came with a first aid kit.

After he cleaned the cut and put a mini plaster

on it, It was almost unnoticeable

Guess I'll have to walk with my hair on my face for a couple of days to avoid peoples curiosity .

He drove me to the apartment.

Remind me not to ever start a physical fight with Reece.

[11/10, 07:27] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 80

Its been a while since I spent time with my family

It was my first day back from university and we were sort of having a family dinner date,if there is such.

Mom had decided to cook,God knows how much I missed her cooking.

We were sitting outside in the night chilly air near the pool.



Him: Someone missed eating proper meals

I nod,swallowing

Me: I've been tired of eating take aways

I said dishing out for the second time. Stealing meat from his plate seeing it was finished from the bowl

Him: Hayi

He said swatting my hand away.

Mom: Leave my baby Alone,itya wena Mntanam.  
Buyise I weight le uyi losileyo (

Him: I still don't understand how she lost weight when we've been sending her enough money for everything.

Food has nothing to do with it,I've been stressed out.

I woke up earlier than usual the following day

because I didn't feel like sleeping

I did my morning routine before lazily walking to the kitchen

I found my brother busy on his laptop as usual.

Me: Morning

I said hugging him from behind as he was sitting on one of the high chair's

I put my head on his back and closed my eyes

Him: Alona get off me

He said shrugging me off

Me: I feel unloved right now,I mean i just got from varsity after being away from home most of the time . And now I'm here and you already sick of me.

I said as I stomped off to the lounge

I threw myself on the couch and buried my head in one of the cushions and started crying.

Him: Alona I'm sorry, Why are you being emotional ? You know I wasn't being serious.

I continued to sniff

Him: I love having you around, I mean now ndizotsho ndityebe couse you here to cook for me one of your delicious meals

Me: See ? You just want to use me.

I heard him sigh before he sat down next to me

He put his arm around my shoulder and brought me to him

Him: Baby I love you, I'll never use you.

He said wiggling his eyebrows

Me: You're weird.

I said as I giggled.

Him: Now that's what I wanna hear. You just wanted my attention.

Me: Can you make me breakfast. ?

Him: Sure.

Me: Toasted bread,spread butter and jam. Tea with lots of milk .

He looked at me skeptically

Him: Since when do you like jam ?

I don't know

Me: Since I lived in varsity without grocery, I got used to eating alot of things. I think jam sandwich was one of them. Now shoo shoo,I'm hungry.

I said turning to watch the TV

A few minutes later ,he came back

.....

You know after graduation,I thought I was going straight to work. But that plan didn't really seem appealing as I know had a hard time to decide where to,besides me compering salary,distance

and time.

I wanted to work out of the Province or Country, then again my whole life was ndingaba yintoni without my family and friends and maybe Reece

After all that happened, I still cared about him. Though he was probably one of the reasons I wanted to move away, to start fresh. I just couldn't, I didn't have the guts to.

During the week, since I had nothing better to do My brother was teaching me to drive and I was enjoying it though it wasn't easy.

Monday morning we went for a jog.

Feeling the wind hitting my face, My hair whipped behind me while the sound of the

waves in the distance crashed against the rocks

My running shoes dug into the sand as my pace picked up to match the one of my brothers as we ran down the shore line.

I was mesmerized by the beauty surrounding me that I've grown to miss over the past years  
There's nothing like home,I missed this place.

We ran back home and when I got there,I went to freshen up while he made smoothies for us.

When I was done,I went back down

I found the glass filled with the thick liquid,Ozzie wasn't here I guess he must have gone up to freshen

I took the avocado smoothie to my lips ready to take a sip,just as the it went down my throat it came right back up.

I was able to run to the bathroom and vomit out all the contents,rinsing my mouth after. I wondered what sort of a prank,actually what did

he actually put in there.

I guess some people will never change,Ozzie was still the same old Ozzie I left.

[11/10, 07:28] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 81

You know ,I haven't been in contact with Reece since that day we fought.

He had tried calling me on my phone,supposedly to 'talk' but I'd always ignore him. I wasn't ready to face him after what he did.

This day,I was supposed to wake up early since I needed to do grocery early in the morning for mom but I overslept then I was lazy to go because I knew by this time it would be packed in the mall

I got up and went to wash my face and rinse my mouth before going downstairs

I sat on the high chair after I took a cereal box and a bowl

I made cereal for myself and ate.

When I was done,I went to the bathroom to take a shower but before I could do that ,I had this urge to vomit and I did

This time around I couldn't hold it so I did it on the marble floor in the bathroom before ndifike at the toilet seat to finish it off.

I rinsed my mouth,then cleaned up the mess before taking a shower

I wrapped a towel around my body as I went to collapse in bed

I was feeling weak and dizzy so I lay in a fetal position,closing my eyes shut hoping for the feeling to pass

I was disturbed by my ringing phone and I took it from under my pillow.

It was Romeo

Him: I'm outside.



Then he hung up,Romeo was always stingy with  
airtime. I thought he would have changed by  
now seeing he is working and would be earning  
an income

I got up and dragged my feet downstairs,mind  
you I still had the towel on only. I didn't mind he  
has seen me naked anyway

I opened for him,he engulfed me in a hug then  
started staring me up and down

Him: Whatever you trying to do,it won't work. No  
matter how hot and sexy your body is,I'm still  
gay so forget it

I folded my arms to my chest and stared at him  
rumbling

He shrugged

Me: I just got done bathing Rome then I lay  
down because I was feeling a little sick.

He nod

Him: You look sick

Me: But I feel better now

When we got to my room he sat on my bed while I changed into my under garments in front of him and he didn't mind.

I was combing my hair after I changed into an outfit, specially chosen by my upcoming designer of a friend.

When we were done we went to the mall for shopping.

I had the grocery list mom gave me and I was ticking along while he had the trolley with some of the grocery.

Me: I feel like

Him: It's not in the list

After an hour we went with the grocery bags to mom's house and she wasn't around. Melissa also was at work

Yeah, she decided to stay and start afresh here. Mom got her a job interview and she got the job so she lived here. At least she was doing something for herself instead of lazing around to mess people's lives

Me: I'm tired

I said to Romeo as we sat down on the kitchen chairs after packing the grocery away

Him: I'm hungry

Me: Make chicken, there are salads in the fridge

He nod as he got up and took a chicken wings tray from the freezer

I showed him where everything was before I went to the sitting room

I was planning on watching tv but I got drowsy and I ended up taking a nap.

I was woken up by Romeo

Me: How long was I out ?

Him: Not for long,here.

He said handing me the plate

It looked good and I bet it tasted even  
more good

The meat was done by Romeo who happened  
to take cooking classes also in school

It was the marinated wings then the three  
salads.

I took a spoon of the green salad before taking  
a wing to my mouth

I bit into it,right then as the steam came out to  
show that it was well cooked and hot

I started smelling it,it kinda smelled  
rotten,expired

I dropped it back on the plate and ran to the  
bathroom to vomit,I cleaned myself up and  
went back to Romeo

Covering my nose.

Me: Anything I eat these days is upsetting my tummy,I must have done that (vomiting) a fifth time during these past three days.

Him: What is it

Me: I thought you took cooking classes Rome and there they thought you everything,from checking the expiry date an-

Him: We just bought the meat today and it's five days from here to expiring

He said,knitting his eyebrows in confusion after he smelt it

Him: There's nothing wrong with the meat  
Alona maarn

He said biting,chewing then swallowing.

I gagged

Me: Just take it away please,you can use the kitchen and come back here when you done

Him: Alona are you being serious about this ?

I nod

Me: It really smells bad.

He was quite for a moment as he thought of something

Him:Baby,don't freak out okay. ?

I nod looking at him skeptically

Him: Seeing you been getting sick,when last did you get your period

I snorted

Me: What does that have to do with anything ?

Him: When. ?

I tried to think but couldn't really come up with an answer

Me: I don't know

Him: Did you get it this month.

Me: I usually get it at the beginning of the

month,I think it's late this month

I shrugged nonchalantly.

Me: Why are y- ,you not thinking that I'm pregnant or something eh ?

He confirmed it when he didn't reply.

I burst out laughing at his serious and silly thought

Me: Geez Dude ! Relax,I'm fine.

Him: You wouldn't mind me going to the garage and coming back with the pregnancy test

Me: Romeo I'm not pregnant,come on.

Him: You wouldn't mind. ?.

He asked making the sentence clearer,he was being serious. It's not everyday you see Him with seriousness,I should be worried

I gulped nervously

He got up,taking a piece from his plate and went out.

I was nervous, why would I. ? I know I'm perfectly fine

The last time I had sex with Reece was a month ago and I remember him using protection, at least we were always careful after that incident when he broke my virginity.

Oh well.

I got up, covering my nose with a cloth.

I took the plates to rinse them in the kitchen

I was done later, I took a tub of ice cream and went to watch TV.

I got a call later on from mom asking me if I had done what he asked of me

I told her yes and that I was currently at her house with Romeo.

A few minutes Later

Romeo came back with three b pregnancy tests, he was being ridiculous



He forced me to pee in all of them and while he had them to his hand

I was a nervous wreck as I waited for him to tell me the results

I shouldn't be worried ,but I couldn't help to get nervous. It was the situation after all

Him: Baby, you pregnant.

My breath hitched in my throat,I felt my head spin after that revelation

I snatched the sticks from his hand,to confirm it myself and yes.

I was indeed pregnant

Me: No.

I threw them at the wall

I dropped to my knees

I screamed out even louder.

Me: NO.. No..No,this is not happening to me

I pulled on my hair in frustration as I sobbed  
Romeo wrapped his arms around me in comfort.  
I was crying and screaming I'm sure the  
neighbours heard me .

..

A bit later later on,I woke up in my room  
I must have fallen asleep after I've done that  
much crying  
I could feel my eyes were swollen.  
I checked the time and it was 18:39  
I went to splash my face with water before  
going back to my room  
Standing in front of the full length mirror  
I lifted my top up to have a look at my stomach  
It was kinda flat ,maybe that's what I wanted to  
see though

My bedroom door opened and I quickly pulled the top down

In entered Romeo and I sighed in relief

Me : Is there anything noticeable ?

I asked,my voice coming out hoarsely

I said pulling up my top once again

He took me by my hand and sat me down on the bed

He sighs

Him: It doesn't matter if it's noticeable or not,eventually it will be noticeable to everyone and you going to have to explain.

Me: Or I could get rid of it before anyone can notice it.

I suggested.

I wiped the tear that fell down from my eye

Him: I don't understand why you would want to do that,you will have all the support you need

Alona i'm here for you your family too,I mean the news might not settle in well but they will understand ev-

Me: This is not really about them,I'm not doing this because of them. Reece, I don't want to mother his baby. Do you know what this (pointing at my stomach ) means ? I'll be forever tied to him,he'll never let me go Romeo,my freedom will be gone,I'm no longer my own person,he'll never stop treating me like shit, He'll control me and I don't want that.

Him: It doesn't have to be like that.

Me: You don't understand. I've made my decision Romeo,I'm doing it.

[11/10, 07:29] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 82

Me: Or I could get rid of it before anyone can notice it.

I suggested.

I wiped the tear that fell down from my eye

Him: I don't understand why you would want to do that, you will have all the support you need Alona I'm here for you your family too, I mean the news might not settle in well but they will understand ev-

Me: This is not really about them, I'm not doing this because of them. Reece, I don't want to mother his baby. Do you know what this (pointing at my stomach) means? I'll be forever tied to him, he'll never let me go Romeo, my freedom will be gone, I'm no longer my own person, he'll never stop treating me like shit, He'll control me and I don't want that.

Him: It doesn't have to be like that.

Me: You don't understand. I've made my decision Romeo, I'm doing it.

.....

Romeo: Alona you can't abort the baby

Me: Why not

Romeo: Akenzanga nto umntana Alona, it's an innocent soul and you can't blame it for its father's wrong doings. At least think about it

I shook my head

Me: I'll get rid of it and no one has to know that I was even pregnant, our lives will just go on

Him: I'm not agreeing with you on this

Me: It doesn't matter, I'm doing what's best for me.

Him: By killing an innocent baby

Me: I'm not kil- look just ,leave

Him: Fine

He got up and took his stuff and went out slamming my bedroom door behind

I just sat there ,engulfed in my thoughts

A thought crossed my mind,

I took my phone and called someone from the hospital

Remember the doctor whom I gave my numbers to at the hospital when I was hospitalized,after being assaulted by Lungelo. ?

Okay

.....

After some convincing I had to do ,He sneaked me terminating pills and I picked them up the following day at the hospital,being so discreet about it

I was at my brothers house by now,Where there's so much privacy because he's always

It was a weekend anyway

I was in my room ,I had the pills stored under my pillow

I just didn't have the guts to take them,yet.

It was around 20:28 pm and I was eating

dinner, a simple light dinner that I made for myself when I heard someone at the front door.

I went to open

Just the person I wanted to see

Note: Sarcasm

It was Reece, I still don't fucken understand why he always looked so good like nothing ever bothered him, it doesn't even show through his appearance when he's stressed out or miserable

Unlike me right now

My hair was a messy bun on top of my head, I was wearing Ozzy's huge shirt and some black tights with these fluffy colourful socks. True definition of stressed out IDC mood.

Me: Oz is not here

Him: I'm not here for him

I arched my eyebrow as I folded my arms to my chest



His eyes travelled down from my face to my stomach and they lingered there

Him: We need to talk

Yerr,Romeo couldn't have told him could he

Me: We've done enough talking there's nothing else we can talk about

I said trying to close the door but he blocked it with his shoe while he looked ne straight in the eyes

I gulped nervously.

Letting go of the door,I went to tidy up the mess on the kitchen before going up to my room and Reece followed me

I was in the middle of fixing the bed cover so that I could sleep when I started feeling nauseas

I rushed to the bathroom and vomited my plate all out,I cleaned myself up before walking back to my room

I stood ,stuck by the door as I saw Reece holding a mini paper bag and a box ,with the pills on the other

I started sweating

Walking towards him with wobbly legs because of the way I was so scared

I snatched them from him

Me: You have no right to rummage through my stuff and invade my privacy

Him: I have every fuckin right especially when that fucken stuff is danger to my ..baby

He had a hard time letting the last word out

Ahh so he knew,it was Reece after all it was just a matter if time

Me : Who said it was yours ?

Him: You also admitting to being pregnant and keeping it away from me and planning on killing it. Look Lets not beat around the bush,the baby

is mine ,I'm responsible. I would have known if you have fucked around and I would have doubts about the pregnancy but you haven't so it is mine

Me: So ?

He chuckled as he shook his head from side to side.

He firmly clasped his hand on my wrist to pull me to him

I started whimpering

Him: Jonga Alona Sundi nyela yeva ? I'm already pissed off at you now don't patronise me.

Me: Let go you hurting me

Him: Ayonto le ndikwenza yona,I should put a bullet in between your eyes cause I see your ancestors are calling you. Do you know what I would have done if you would have went through with it. ?,with killing my baby

I secretly rolled my eyes as I looked to the side

Him: I swear You would have followed him or her. Bendizoku gcwaba naye.

Me: Ngoku ulinde ntoni ungabi sayenza lonto ?

He stared at me for a moment before he pointed his long finger to my forehead, his nail digging in the flesh as he pushed my head back

Him: Awuva maarn Alona.

He said passing me, bumping into my shoulder at the process

He put the pills on nightstand, if it was someone else he would have flushed them down the drain

Him: I dare you, I dare you Alona to take them I swear I'll show you what I'm really capable of , I'll handle you.

He said taking his clothes off, putting his gun on his side of the bed

He got under the covers.

I stood there for a couple of minutes deciding whether to get inside or not

Hayi wethu bendi godola and ndisozela mna.

I got in also and put in a few pillows in between us

Reece took them, throwing them down to the floor as he brought his bare chest to cover my back. I could feel his bulge

He had his hands wrapped around my waist in a tight yet comfortable grip

Me: Suthi nca kum Reece

Him: Khandi yeke Mntana ndini.

[11/10, 07:30] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 83

When I woke up the following morning, Reece ebe ngekho se caleni kwam. He must have left

I lazily got up and went to do my morning routine before going downstairs to eat

I was kinda scared to eat, fearing that i might vomit it so i decided on sticking with fruit salad. As i sat there eating, i heard my brother dragging his feet from upstairs

He came hugging me from behind, his arms around my waist and i was nervous. I had a thought that he would feel the change in my stomach, though it was barely showing

Me: Let me make you something to eat

I said getting up and quickly making the cereal for him. He went with it up to his study saying he had something to finish off.

I was on my own when i heard a buzz from the front door

Murmuring some profanities I got up anyway to open

Finding Reece

Me: He is upstairs

Him: I'm here to see you

I sighed in frustration

Me:I don't want to see you

He let himself in anyway and i closed the door behind

Him:Alona we really need to talk

Me: Oh so now you know how to talk ?,thought we've done that so many times that it doesn't help anymore,I thought your hand did the talking for you now.

I watched as his expression fell,letting his guard down before quickly masking it. I know my words pierced through his thick skull

Him: I shouldn't have,I know I hurt you over and over again Alona and for that i'm sorry

Me:Leave

Him: Alona pl-

Me: No

I said looking to the side

It was silent for a moment before he kneeled down,taking my hands to his

Him: Alona

His voice was deep yet soft.

I looked down at him

Him:Jonga,no excuse for the pain i coused you,let's try again and i'll do better for you,and the baby.

For once he put his pride aside,he was being sincere.I've never seen him so vulnerable,it meant alot hearing him say that,I felt like he also meant it

"Yho! Never thought i'd see the day the hardcore Gang Lord go down on his knees.Khandiphe lento umtyise yona mntase"

I heard my brother say as he stood with a shocked face on the top of the stairs.

We stared at him



Him: This looks serious, you better not be proposing to her, Baby please don't accept, I'd die if I were to have a brother in-law like him

Me: Who do you rather prefer I came with a priest's son

He pondered on the thought for a moment, he shrugged as he headed to the kitchen.

I snatched my hands away from Reece's and went to my room to freshen up

After I took a bath, I had a towel wrapped around my body as I went out of the bathroom.

Reece sat on the edge of my bed

He made my bed because I remember getting up and going to the kitchen, leaving it unattended.

He patted the space next to him, I went to sit down

Him: B-

Me: Ndiya kuxolela (I forgive you)

I said cutting him off

Him:It means alot

Me:But Reece,I hate the way you treat me.Look,atleast now i'm carrying your baby,have respect for me and if not for me then atleast for Lo(pointing my stomach) Be the kind of father that your father was never was for you,that you wished for him to be.

Even though he didn't answer me,I know for sure what I said got to him.

Him:I know i'm not ready to be a father but I'll try my best.

I nod

Him:I missed you

He said kissing my cheek before he buried his face to my neck to take me in.He had his hands on my waist,pushing me down,he got on top of me supporting his weight on his elbows.

We kissed,I stopped him when he was about to take my towel off

He got off me

Him: So awuzu ndipha kengoku? (You not going to give me some)

I swear my cheek turned a flaming red, it's been a while since I had that colour to my cheeks.

I blushed because of the way he was being

Him: Okay andiz' kucenga (I'm not gonna beg) I'll just turn my attention to my Pumpkin

Me: Pumpkin?

Him: Yeah, Umntanam (My baby)

I giggled

Him: So.. Have you told your family?

I shook my head

Me: I'm scared, guess I'm not ready

We spent rest of the day out, catching up.

UNFORTUNATELY i didn't need to tell my mom

about the pregnancy. She found out on her own

It was a Sunday night after we ate dinner but I was still eating since I asked for seconds.

It was the three of us, I, Mom and Melissa

It was after I was done eating when I got nauseous and I ran to the toilet but luckily nothing came out.

I went back on the dining table after I drank water and felt a little bit better. I pushed the plate to the side

Mom: Are you okay?

I nod, forcing a smile

Her: You'd tell me if you were sick right?

I pouted for a moment before I nod again

Her: You know, I'm a mother and a nurse so it's almost impossible to like to me, I've noticed some changes Alona. Now is there something I need to know?

I shook my head

Her:Umithi Alona.

It was a matter of fact,there was no use lying to her anymore,she was bound to find out anyway

Me: I'm sorry.

Melissa was quiet all this while ngathi akekho

Mom:Yho! Alona yinto le undenza yona ?(what are you doing to me)

She asked now standing on her feet.

Mom:Umithi Alona,Jonga ke undi bonisa ubudala bakho ngoku,thatha yonk' impahla yakho nale iku bhuti wakho uhambe uye kule ndoda yakho.

(Alona's mom chasing her out)

[11/10, 07:30] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 84

I couldn't leave that night seeing it was already late.

The following morning,I had already packed my clothes the previous night.

I was out the door when I heard my mom's voice from behind

Her:Uyaphi ?(Where are you going)

I was confused for a moment,turning to look at her

Me:I thought you said I sh-

Her:Just because I said you should doesn't really mean you really should,I was speaking out of anger.Unless you really wanted to leave

I shook my head,No

Her: Good,Now go make something to eat for yourself

Me:I'm not hungry.

Her:Awutyeli wena wedwa Alona,hamba.

She said sternly,pointing to the kitchen then taking my bags and supposedly taking them to

my room and I went for breakfast.

"I didn't mean the things I said to you yesterday,I was angry and.."

Me: Dissapointed,I understand.

Her: I didn't expect it from you,yet.You just graduated,in the process of getting work then maybe after you could have started a family.

She sighed

Her:But now,Okwenze kileyo kwenzekile (what's done is done)

I was quiet all this wihile.

Her:So have you told the one responsible ?

I nod,this was awkward

Me:He is willing to take responsibility.

Her: Okay.So have you gone for any check ups?

I shook my head.

Her: Eat up and we'll go

I nod

Me: Does Oz know ?

Her: Yes, I told him and he's not happy with you right now.

She continued

Her: You know, I still don't understand how you got pregnant after all I've done. I thought you used the contraceptive, I thought you about the consequences of unprotected sex, not only pregnancy Alona, have you tested for any other things ?

I shook my head.

Her: Iyandi xaka lento yakho yoba irresponsible.

Yeah After that talk we went to see a doctor and I'm indeed pregnant, 5 weeks and this is my 6th. I was also clean.

After that, mom had to go to work while I went



home.

I didn't want to go back at Oz's yet, he was probably mad at me.

I had a tub of icecream with me and I was currently under the blankets in my room watching tv, it was raining and pretty cold outside.

Laying there thinking about all that has happened lately,

One thing that has been bugging me about the pregnancy is that i'm still young

I have my A levels and have great career aspects.

So what makes me getting pregnant wrong ? I might not fulfill my dreams, lose time looking after the baby that's was not even in my plans.

I sighed as I picked up my ringing phone, Reece

Him:Uphi

Me:Mom's house

It wasn't a couple of minutes when he came knocking at the front door,I dragged my fleece blanket with me

I opened then helped him take off his coat that was now dripping wet,I went to take a towel and gave it to him so he could wipe his face

Me:What were you thinking going out on the rain ?

Him: Xa ndini Khumbula ndithini ?(What am I supposed to do when i miss you ?)

When he was done I took it and went to hang it in the bathroom.

Me:Should I make you coffe ?

He nod,I headed to the kitchen and just when I was almost halfway making when I couldn't stand the smell ,I ran to the bathroom to vomit

Reece came up to hold my hair away from my face and when I was done I brushed my teeth and rinsed my mouth.

Splashing my face with water before going to the sitting ,laying on the couch in a fetal position while he covered me with a fleece.

Me:I can't make you coffe.

Him: Theni ngathi uPumpkin uqal'ugeza nje  
?( Why does it seem like Pumpkin is starting to be naughty ?)

\*Pumpkin,is Reece's nickname for the baby.

Me: I'm not even suprised,you the father after all.  
He chuckled as he sat down.

Me: I went to the doctor today.

Him:Without me ?

Me:What's the big deal ?

Him: It's your first check up Alona and I wasn't

there now you ask me what's the big deal ?

Me: I didn't think you'd want to go,I thought you'd be busy or something.

Him: It wouldn't have hurt to ask.

Me: Okay i'm sorry,I'll let you know next time.

Him: Next time you meeting my private doctor,i'll sign you under him and i'll pay.

Me: B-

Him: It's not up for discussion

Me: Okay.

Him: Ngumntanam Lo(It's my baby) I'd hate to be excluded and have you make decesions without m-

I quickly kissed him on the lips just to shut him,after a few minutes I pulled out.

Him: How about I take you on this couch.

He smirked as he wiggled his eyebrows.

I punched him playfully on his chest.

Me: You pervert ! In my mom's house?

He shrugged.

Him: She doesn't have to know

Me: Eww Reece, No.

He chuckled at my now serious face.

Before I could tell him off, the door opened

"Yho!, Yimoto kabani le intle kangaka phandle. Zange nd-.." (Whose Fancy car is it parked outside. I'd never s- ..)

She stopped mid sentence as she stared at us.

Mom.

NOT EDITED.

[11/10, 07:30] [ +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 85

This is a situation where no daughter wants to

be found in.

I looked at my mom before looking at Reece who was calm as ever

Me: Mom, you back early

I said chuckling uneasily

Her: We went busy

I nod

Me: M-om meet R..

Her: I think I recognise those brown eyes from somewhere.

She said looking at him

Him: Been your son's friend since we were little

Her: Oh Yes, You've been friends ever since your family moved here in SA from the states Oh my god you've grown out to be this handsome, Successful young man. How's your family back home ? I heard about your mom Rene was it ? I'm sorry. Your dad is he-

Me: Mom!

I exclaimed at her to stop bombing him with questions.

Her: Oh hai kaloku ndimgqibele kudala. So what brings you here ? Is Oz here ?

Swallowing nervously

Me: Actually Mom. He is the one responsible for this pregnancy.

Suddenly it was quiet, an uncomfortable silence at that. I don't know what she was thinking

After a while

Her: Oh

Okay

Her: Can you make me a cup of tea.

She said looking at me, this was her way of saying he needed to speak with him without me around

So I got up and went to the kitchen

After a While,I was about to take e tea to her when i stopped midway becouse their conversations cought my ear

Mom:Have you ever lay a hand on her ?

It was quiet for a momemeny

Him:Ewe Ma

He was being honest.

Her:Look I'd do anything to protect my daughter from harm,but now that's almost impossible seeing how attached she is to you.Your mom and I were good friends,We told each other everything,I know how your dad treated her.Seeing your dad's ways pass on,I don't want that for Alona. She can't live like that

Him:I'm nothing like him,I don't want to be like him

I heard him say,his voice usual..strained.

Him: I've worked on my temper,I now know how to control myself.I'm in the process of



changing,for her.I'm not the same old,I'd seen the positive impact she brought onto me.I won't hurt her

Mom: Is that a promise you made to yourself ?A promise you intend to keep

Him:Yes

Her:Can I trust you ?

Him:Ewe ma.

Her: Okay,now what are your intentions with her ?

Yhu..Eshee

Right then,I walked in

Giving mom her cup of tea.

HerWhy didn't you some for yourvisitor ?

Me:He doesn't like tea and I can't make him Coffe

Him:Besides that,I was on my way out.

He said getting up.

Her:I thought you were staying for dinner

Him:I'd love to but i need to rush  
somewhere,Maybe next time

Her:I'll hold you to it.

He chuckled

He turned to look at me

Him:Aren't you going to walk me out ?

I looked at mom and she nod.I went to put on a  
gown and went out.

As we stood outside his car

Me:I'm sorry about my mom.

Him:What's there to be sorry about,She just  
wants me to pay for damages

Me: Oh.I mean about the way he cornered you  
with the questions about your family

Him: You were listening

I shrugged.

Him: Yeah, talking about them changes my mood

Me: I know and i'm sorry.

I said wrapping my arms around his waist since I couldn't reach his neck

He hugged me back, having his strong arms around me could put me to sleep right there and then. He was so warm and smelled really good. He kisses my forehead

Him: I need to leave

Me: Where are you rushing to?

Him: I need to take care of business at the gang house, I'll come pick you up tomorrow.

Me: Early ne?, Don't come late.

Him: Okay now bye

He said kissing me one last time on the lips before he drove off and i went back inside

The following day

I got up and cleaned around the house then I went for a bath. I changed into my white baggy vesy and my one button, denim torn shorts.

I wore my flip ons, putting my hair up in a bun on top of my head.

It was pretty cool outside so it was an appropriate look.

I went to make a snack for myself while I waited for Reece.

"How is the pregnancy treating you so far"

I heard Melissa ask and I shrugged

Me: Not so good

Her: It gets even worse, you'll get fat (looking at my sandwich) swollen feet and-

Me: Look I know what to expect

And before she could make a retort her phone started ringing and she went out

answering 'Babe'

A few minutes later Reece was waiting outside his car for me. He opened the door for me to get in

Me: Someone is being a gentleman, I like.

Him: You know I'm always gentle

Me: Sure..

Him: Except when I'm fucking.

He smirked. I glared at him and his bluntness

He closed the door behind before he went to his side.

Him: You look good by the way.

He said kissing my cheek

Me: Thanks.

His eyes trailed up my legs and to my shorts.

Him: You suffocating my baby.

He said unbuttoning and unzipping my shorts.

I rolled my eyes

Me: Ah Reece ?(Looks at me) Remember when I asked you to take me to strawberry farm and you said you'd take me some time when you not busy.

He sighed.

Him:Yes

Me:Well..

Him:Hayi Alona.imagine me holding a basket picking up strawberries

I was quiet for a moment,Folding my arms to my chest.Now sniffing

Him: Are you seriously crying ?,Yeh Alona.Okay Let's pick up a few things at the store siye ke.

We spent half an hour at the farm.I had him hold the basket while i picked the Strawberries

[11/10, 18:21] +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 86

We went to his house when we came back from the farm.

After I had the strawberries cleaned,I sat at the lounge and ate satisfying my craving.

Later

I was in Reece's room in bed after we had a steamy session,my phone rang and when I answered it was Zane

Him: Alona I need a favour

Me: Okay

Him:If it's too much for you I'll understand.

Me:What is it Zane.

Him: I need someone to look after Khayone,I'll be away for a day and his granny is i-

Me:You don't have to explain Zane,It's fine i'll do it,i'll be spending time with him after all and I don't mind

Him:Are you sure ?

Me:Yes,just bring him and i'll be at my brother's house.

Him: Thank you so much,I knew I could count on you.

We hung up.

Reece: What do you know about baby sitting.

Me:I'll learn,I mean I'm having my own soon so i got to learn.If It get's too much I'll call you.

Him:Wondering why he called you to stay with Khayone instead of me ?

I shrugged

Me:Why?

He scratched the back of his head.

Him:The was this one time where i had to baby sit him he was restless so I kinda added half a teaspoon of whiskey.He became so hyper that I had to call Zane .



I stared at him and shook my head in disapproval.

Sooner or later I had to go back to my brother's seeing I was missing him and I had to face him sooner or later.

When I got home though he wasn't there and then I had a chance to cook his favourite dish.

I stayed a few hours alone, I had long dished out and ate and now I was trying not to fall asleep on the couch while I waited for my brother.

When I heard him enter, I stood on my feet and watched his move.

He wasn't his usual happy playish self whenever he saw me.

I couldn't help noticing his swollen lip, and my caring self forgot that I had a matter in hand to solve. I went to the kitchen to get iceblocks and went back.

I was about to put it on his lip when he moved back.

Me:What happened ?

He didn't answer me for a minute before he gritted through his teeth.

Him:I told him to fucken play it safe.

I knew what he was on about.

Me:It was a mistake.

I said quietly

Him: A mistake that happened with you under my watch when mom trusted me to keep an eye on you,now she feels like I failed her .That I'm not adult enough to take care of you

Me: But she d-

Him:She might have not sayed it to your face that i also dissapointed her but she did to mine.

Me:I'm sorry. You've already done enough for me and I know you took care of me so you don't

have to put yourself at fault.

Silence

He threw himself on the couch as he sat down.

Him:And to think that out of all people you had to get impregnated by him.

He looked at me as he shook his head side to side.

I sat down next to him and after an awkward silence

Me:What happened to your lip?

Him: Got in a fight with Reece.

I swallowed the lump in my throat.

I handed him the ice pack as i got up to take his plate and warm it up.I got back with it and handed it to him as I went upstairs to my room,i'll talk to him when he has cooled off.

I was under the blankets in my room talking to Reece on the phone.

Him: Yeah after you left your brother budged in my house and we had a man to man talk

Me: You two had a fight

Him: After.

Me: He's mad at me.

Him: Give him time he'll get over it.

I sighed

Him: Now what are you doing?

Me: I was about to sleep but then you called, you ?

Him: I'm at the gang house.

Me: But Reece, When are you quitting this life ?

Him: Alona don't start with that.

Me: No, don't think you can dodge me this time, I mean Reece you gonna be a dad now i'm sure you don't want your baby to grow the way you grew up, to turn out to be like you in that way.

Him: I don't want that for uPumpkin Alona.

Me:Then atleast think about it.

Him:I got to hang up.

Me:Reece don't avoid this topic.

Him:I'm not I just have to get back to something,I'll call you .

He said as he hung up.

I put my phone on the nightstand as i got ready to sleep.

I woke up the following day when I felt like there was something running along from my cheek to my ear.

I opened my eyes to find Khayone ontop of me eating my face and the thing was his drool. I smiled such a good morning,first thing when i wake up to see this little cute innocent soul.

And to think that I almost wanted to get rid of my own baby,It meant I would never experiance

the love that Zane has for his baby as a parent, That I won't wake up in the morning every day to have something to live for.

I was starting to accept this pregnancy, It felt like a weight has been lifted off me and I was able to breath and be free now that my family knew about it.

This is going to be one hell of a ride and i think thay i'm ready for it, Reece better buckle up becouse the is a long way to go.

I sat up straight, brushing the sleep from my eyes.

Me: Hey little guy, you not so little any more are you ? you've grown up to me a handsomey hu ?

I said kissing his soft cheek and tickling his side just to hear him giggle, and he did

I kept on throwing him up and then catch him back and he was laughing like crazy.

I missed him.

[11/10, 18:22] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 87

I woke up in the afternoon after Khayone and I fell asleep. He wasn't next to me, I got up and went to look for him on the other rooms before going to the kitchen. Uvalo luye lahla when I saw him with my brother

He was sitting down on one of the high chairs and Khayone was in front of him sitting on the bar table. Ozzie had a glass and a can of score next to it while Khayone had his baby bottle filled with it.

Him: You know, it's not so bad having a little guy running around the house and all.

He said as he cheered up his glass with Khayone's bottle. I stared at him and shook my head.

Me: Remind me not to ever try to leave my baby with you.

I said trying to take the bottle Khayone was sucking on but he refused. He started screaming furiously that i got startled and let him be on the side Oz was laughing his ass out.

Me: Be ready to deal with him when the drink has kicked in.

My brother and I spent the full 2 hours chasing after Khayone.

It was 2 am when i woke up. I didn't feel like sleeping and i had this huge craving for cheese. I slowly got up from the bed, wearing my sleepers. I dragged my feet to the kitchen.

Opening the two door fridge, I rummaged through and didn't find it. Yazi, there's a lot of grocery in this house but no cheese. I could have picked anything but i just needed it. I snail walked up the stairs and into my brother's



room,I thanked god that he was home.Actually he spent his time at home lately "Looking after his baby sister" as he likes to say,to be near when something happens.

He was sprawled out on the bed eko bude ubuthongo.I hated waking him up,considering he usually doesn't sleep.I shook him for a few minutes till I heard him groan in annoyance before rolling to the other side of the bed and burying his face under the pillow.I walked to the other side,snatching the pillow and hitting him with it,he slowly opened his eyes looking up at me

He huffed in annoyance.

Him:Yintoni Alona(What is it)

Me:I w- need cheese.

He looked at me skeptically.

Taking his iPhone from the nightstand,he looks at the time

Him:You waking me up at this time for what?Cheese ?,Hamba uyozithathela e fridge(in)  
(Go take some)

Me:Ayikho

Him:Now what must I do,drive 30 minutes away to the garage and get you cheese ?

He asked irritated,How he hated being woken up.

I folded my arms to my chest.

Him:You not thinking of making me do that are you?

I titled my head to the side as I looked at him

Him:Uphambene (You mad)

Me: Please.

Him:No

Me:But I really need it,I have this huge craving and it feels like if i don't get it I might get sick.

Him:I'm tired to drive.

Me: Since when do you ever get tired.

Him: B-

Me: Oh you're not you just tired of me

Him: I never said that, pregnant women and taking things personal.

He shook his head as he saw that I was crying, he rubbed the sleep from his eyes

Him: I'll go get. But I don't understand why I should be the one to suffer when Reece doesn't, I mean I really don't get it cause he's the one responsible for all this but I'm t' ..better yet

He said stopping ushwabula and taking his phone from the nightstand and dialling a number, put the phone on his ear.

Him: Alona and your baby has this huge (exaggerating) craving for cheese

Reece: Ngoku ?(So)

The phone was on loud speaker

Him:So?We ran out and now she wants someone to go to the garage.

Reece: Now Go.

Him:Who's responsible for the pregnancy

Reece:Me.

Him: ..

Reece: Ok I get it,FUCK! I'll bring it,yeses.

Oz smirked as he hung up.

Him: Problem solved.

Me:Am I the problem that is solved or is t-

Him:Alona I never said you were a problem.

Me:But you just said t-.You know what never mind.I get it,you fed up with me.I'm a baggage,a sagging sack of potato on your shoulder ne ?

I glared at him as he held in a laugh,I turned and left

After a few minutes passed by that felt like

hours,he came

Opening the door to let him in and lunged for the paper bag on his hand.Opening it eargerly,the smell satisfied my nostrils

I took a bite,closing my eyes in satisfaction.

Me:What?

Him:Nothing just the way you did that gave me a boner.

Me:Thanks for this,you can leave now

Him:Na I think I'll stay.

He said going up to my room while I stayed behind an ate

When I had enough I went to put it in the fridge and took a litre of yoghurt and went with it upstairs.Reece was under my covers texting on his phone.

Me:You do think this is your house.

I said getting in bed,Reece arms immediately

went on my waist.

Him:Yinto usoloko utya ububhanxa Alona.

Me:Mntanakho akaku thandi ukutya,(Your baby doesn't like food)

I shrugged as I took a spoon.

:|

6 months into the pregnancy and I went around with this huge belly.I had all types of mood swings and I pretty much think everyone around me was fed up,starting with Reece.

Everything was going well so far.

I had just got done bathing and I was wearing a white summer dress and my sandals,I would have preferred to wear denim shorts and my kicks but ndikule situation where nothing fits me.

I was going out with Reece for lunch.

[11/10, 18:22] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 88

Arriving at the restaurant where we were going to have lunch in.

Came a moment where a host showed us a table,he pulled a chair for me and he was about to help me seat down

Reece: Don't touch her

He snapped causing the guy to widen his eyes in fear and let go of me

Me:Reece stop,being polite is part of his job

I said putting my small hands on his chest to push him back.He glared at the guy for a few minutes

Guy:Your waiter will be with you shortly

He quickly said before he rushed to get away.

It wasn't a couple minutes before a waitress appeared

All while long she was trying to flirt with

Reece,bendi ngathi andi bonakali.After she ever so nicely insulted the way I looked with the pregnancy and the way I was dressed She came with our order

Her:Here you go sir,if you need anything else,just ask.I'm available at your disposable

She purred

Me:I'm sure,slut.

I mumbled under my breath

Reece:No thank you,I assure you whatever you are handing out for free wouldn't satisfy me as much as the girl who is sitting in front of me will.Now stop making yourself look like a desperate slut as my girlfriend so nicely put it and go do your job before I fire you,flirting with you boss shows me how inappropriate all the staff in there is,I should have a look at all of you.

He snapped causing her to be embarrassed and leave quickly.He mumbled "Exactly why I prefer



to stay in my house" then sighed in frustration.

Him:I don't feel good calling you my girlfriend.

Me:What do you mean ?

Him:I want to call you my fiance or my wife

Me: Or you could just say your baby's mom.We're hungry let's eat.

I said chuckling lightly trying to take his attention from the topic.

Aware of what i was trying to do,he said nothing and we ate in silence.

After lunch,Reece he drove me to mom's house where I found Melissa with someone I thought I'd never see again

Anele.

To say I was shocked was the least.

I awkwardly greeted

Me:What you doing here ?

He just looked at Melissa

Her:He's my boyfriend

She said smugly

Me: Oh I see

I said quietly as i looked at him while his eyes were focused on my baby bump,Melissa could probably sense the awkward silence between the two of us.I cleared my throat focusing my attention somewhere else than him,I made my way to the kitchen to make myself a snack before quickly going to my room,When I say quickly don't think I was going on a fast pace or anything,that was impossible for me.

I lay on my back switching on the tv.

Few minutes later I was slowly but surely falling asleep,I was somehow tired

The opening of the door got me to open my eyes fully,in entered Anele.I swallowed nervously as I stood on my feet and got ready

for anything

Me:W-what are you doing here ?

I stuttered out

Him:Alona.I was expecting something different than that

Me:What? Engulf you in a hug and say lets pick up where we left off ?No.

Him:I miss you

He said quietly;I shook my head

Me:You have someone in your life and I do too,what happened between us was a mistake and it wasn't meant to be.

He shook his head and took a step forward

Him:You might feel like it was a mistake,all you ever saw me for was a rebound and I don't care Alona (trying to touch my hand but I brushed him off) I was always there for you,you made me feel something for you Alona-

He so badly wanted to touch me that i had a hard time dodging it,he managed to hold my hands in a death grip and I whimpered

Me:Let go of me!

I screamed at him,he put both my arms behind my back and tries to kiss me

Him:I know you love me too,Alona please lets try one more time.

He said planting his lips on mine forcefully ,with the little strength I had I pushed him off me and before I could run out he gripped me by my arm to pull me back, tripping on my feet I fell on my side.I got up and before I could think of a plan,The door opened in came Melissa

Her:What's going on here

Him:Nothing babe,Future sister in law and I are just getting to know each other.

She glared at me before taking his hand in hers and dragging him out.I breathed out

shakily,taking my phone out and blindly dialing  
Reece's number

Him:Alona

Me:Reece I need you to hurry up and come pick  
me,he is here and h-

Him:Alona calm down,Andikuva.

Me:Anele is here a-

and before I could finish off he hung up.

I stayed locked up in my room until Reece  
arrived later on

He came knocking on my door and when I  
opened up

Him:Are you okay ?

He took my hands,his eyes taking me in and  
only then he noticed the finger marks that have  
turned purplish on my skin.

His fists clenched and i could see his anger  
build up

Him:Who fucken did this ?

I told him all about that happened and before I could stop him he went out searching for him. In my old room he was making out with Melissa.In a blink of an eye,he hand him up the wall and started delivering punches.

I made a dumb move,trying to pull him off instead he pushed me back,I fell once again.

I tried getting up,I felt wet somewhere in between my legs and before i could check,everything fuzzy.

I blacked out.

[11/10, 18:22] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 89

Opening my eyes and seeing Reece's head resting on my stomach, his hand holding mine in a tight grip

It only took a move from my forefinger to wake him up.

His eyes half closed and half opened,his eyes had dark black circles around showing me how sleep deprived he was was.

Him: You're awake.

Oh god his voice

I nod as I reached out to take a glass of water beside me but he beat me to it as he now helped me to drink with a straw from the glass.

Him: How are you feeling.

I shrugged

Me: W-what happened ?

Apparently I was rushed to the hospital where I was rushed for an ultrasound and my baby was still hanging there seeing the pregnancy was almost faint. Nevertheless there was still our embryo,with it's tiny leg buds and that unmistakably strong heart beat,alive and kicking,apparently human. And my bleeding and

cramping. ?it turns out that I'm one of the women who can experience that and not miscarriage .

Right then the doctor came in,he made some check ups and confirmed that I was still fine

DR: You one strong woman Mrs Cruz.

And before I can object.

DR: I'm still gonna keep you here for a few days just to make sure you're okay now that you Awake.

I nod

DR: You have great support from your husband

Me: We n-

DR: He's been here ever since you were admitted,sleeps here and wakes up here goes to freshen up for a short while then comes back.  
You -

I cleared my throat



He stopped and looked at us as we looked at him.

DR: Sorry,I'm just gonna go.Call me if there's something.

Me: Thank you.

He went out.

Silence.

Him: Alona,I'm sorry. I didn't m-

Me: It's okay Reece,we okay and you don't have to beat yourself about it. I know what happened and you didn't mean for it to turn out like that.

Him: You not mad at me ?

I shook my head as I took his hand to plant a kiss.

He Sighed out in relief.

Him: I almost lost you and the baby,I don't ever want to experience the pain that comes with it again.I'll keep you two safe I promise

Me: Don't make promises that you won't be able to keep Reece.

He kept quiet.

Me: You need to go home and have a refreshing shower and take a nap, you look tired I'm sure you need it.

He got up

Him: I'm just gonna go to the café and grab a coffee

Me: B-

Him: Sundi xelela uba ndithini Alona (Don't tell me what to do Alona)

I kept my mouth shut

Him: What should I get for you ?

I shrugged

Me: I don't have appetite , I'm fine .

.....

A few days later I was discharged and I was at Oz's house.

I had just got done with bathing and I had on my under garments only when the door opened.

Oz budged in

Him: Alona someone is h- Oh shit.

He gasped as he saw my huge baby bump.

Me: You should learn to knock.

Him: Damn ! are you sure you not holding in triplets.

He asked chuckling

I glared at him,raising his hands up in surrender.

I was about to make a retort when I stopped because I felt a movement in my stomach.

I put my hand and it happened again,I gasped

Him: Yintoni ?

He quickly came over to me,I took his hand to

my stomach and we waited for a few seconds before it happened.

My baby was kicking.

I screamed out so loud in excitement as I started crying, tears of joy. To be able to feel that, priceless.

"What is it"

I turned to look at the door as Romeo stood there, he must have heard me screaming.

I motioned with my hand for him to come over, he screamed even louder when he felt it

Him: That should hurt.

Me: It feels like drums are inside me and someone is beating me with the sticks, Ouch!

Rome: Sino Ronaldo apha, Oh maka Ronaldo

He laughs

Oz: Reece will kill you if he hears you compare his baby to another man.

Rome: You should go put on a shirt

He said biting his lower lip,I stifled a giggle.

I watched as my brother furrowed his eyebrows in annoyance.

Him: Fuck Off.

He said going out.

We both burst out laughing Sino Romeo.

Me: You shouldn't have said that

Him: I wanted him to leave so that we can have our alone time,yho Awusembi maarn.

He said combing his hands through my tangled hair as he looked me up and down

I rolled my eyes

Him: You want to tell me uReece ukubona unje ?

I shrugged as I sat down and gave him a lotion to put on my feet since I couldn't.

After I was done,he picked out some clothes for

me seeing as he was taking me out for a make over.

He drove us to the mall

And after a two hours of pampering me,I was tired like really tired that I didn't even want to walk no more so we went to McDonalds for lunch since I was hungry also

I ordered two large cheese burgers,with fries and strawberry milkshake

While Romeo got himself the same just half and some nuggets

Our order came and I wasted no time digging in

Later on we were just finishing off while chatting.

Him: That's gross

He said as he scrunched up his nose watching me dip my fries in the milkshake

Me:this is good.

I said as I ate.

Him: Utsho wamhle futhi ngo usuk' e Salon

He made me do my hair,eyebrows and nails

Me: All thanks to you

Him: Pleasure darling what would you do  
without you me

He Said batting his eyelashes

I giggled as I shook my head.

Me: Now are you going to be able to carry me  
home ?

Him: Forget it.

Me : I don't think I'll be able to get up from here.

I said resting my head on top of my hands on  
the table and closing my eyes.

Him: Alona don't you dare do that to me.

.....

I woke up later on in Reece's house,Romeo

decided to call him to pick me up.

I went to freshen up,wore Reece's huge sleepers and went downstairs.

I found him cooking

His bare chest covered in apron only,damn.

I hugged him from behind

Me: It smells great in here.

Him: It'll be ready in a few.

He said turning to peck my lips.

Me: I'll set up the table so far.

After we ate dinner,we went upstairs to his room.

We were under the covers and I had my back to him as he had his hands around my waist.

He snuggled up his face on my neck and kissed my spot before turning me around to face him.



We kissed and before I knew it both our bare bodies were inches apart.

I moaned in between as his hands roamed freely on my body, Reece knew exactly what to do to get me wet

He opened up both my legs to accommodate himself. When he tried inserting himself into me, it was almost impossible

He tried as I waited impatiently for him, he got it in, in one go and I screamed out in pain as I shot up and stopped him midway, I know he was big but it feels like he had gotten even bigger and right now it felt like he was tearing me up and taking me into early labor.

Me: It hurts Reece, I can't take it.

He sighed as he got off me, I hated disappointing him so I let him hit it from behind .

After.

As we lay in bed, I had my head resting on his

bare chest while I made small circles with the tip of my finger.

Him: I have something for you.

I lifted my face as I looked up at him .

He got up,I waited for him as he went inside his closet.

When he came back,he showed me a small navy velvety box.

I furrowed my eyebrows together in confusion before I gathered in my mind,my heart beat increased.

It was so short and quick

Him: Will you marry me?

Baam,that was it. My head spinning

Heart beat even increase,it was becoming difficult to breath.

It was too soon.

I took the box from his hand,closing it.

I sucked in a breath

Me: I can't

[11/10, 18:22] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 90

I could give you so many reasons why I refused his proposal.

After I refused,he didn't say anything Instead he walked out heading towards the bathroom.After a while engabuyi I decided to go check on him and I found him in the shower.

I stripped my clothes off and got in the steamy shower.He had his back on me as his forehead touched the wall in a leaning position,he looked sexy with the water running down his body.

I didn't know how to approach this.Wrapping my arms around his waist,We stayed there in an awkward silence as the hot water hit our skins and listened to it as it hit the tiled floor.I switched off the running water,swallowing the

lump in my throat

I was nervous

Me:Reece

He turned to look at me,the look he had on scared me.Now tell me how would I marry someone who I'm scared off ?See I was scared of him sometimes,I had to walk around egg shells around him Watch what I say otherwise I'll piss him off and he'll snap at me and I didn't want that,I didn't want to be scared of my husband.

Me:I'm sorry

He snorted

Him:For what Alona ?Refusing my proposal or for not loving me that much to spend the rest of your life with me

Me:I never said I don't love you.

Him:Then what is it ?I'm not good enough,you don't want to accept me for who I am hu ?You

don't want a Gang Leader for a husband

Me:Who would? Everyone is scared of you and so am I,you're cold hearted man Reece you know to be ruthless and here am I still with you despite that,becouse I love you.I find you hot,sexy..I could go on all night.

I said biting my lower lip and standing on my tip toes so I could kiss him,he turned his head to the other side as I heard him murmur,telling me to fuck off

Him:I'm all that and successful but you wouldn't spend the rest of your life with me,I get it.

He said bumping his shoulder into me as he passed me to get out of the shower and I followed him,wrapping a towel around my body.

He had on a robe and I watched him as he stood by the balcony with a glass of whisky in hand,I dont know where that came from.

I tried to get his attention but he ignored me.

Me:Unabo ubu Moffie sometimes.

I said turning to leave, halfway I felt a death grip on my arm turning me around as he looked down at me.

Him:What did you say ?

I heard his deep voice that seemed to be even more deeper whispering in my ear, so low that I almost didn't hear him and that's how I knew it was all jokes aside, I knew I crossed the line

I swallowed nervously as I felt as if I was about to cry

Him:Thetha le Kak' ugqibo yithetha Alona.

I shook my head.

Me:If you want to hit me go ahead

Him:What if I want to kill you this time.

Me:See ?That's exactly one of the reasons I refused you

Him:What are the other?Come on with it.You

always have something smart coming out of that fucken' small mouth,what's your excuse

Me:I'm not making excuses.Look Reece I'm not ready to be someone's wife,I'm having a hard time adjusting that I'm gonna be a mom.Just think about me,This is too much,too soon.

Him:What about me,I want you and the baby close to me,our own family.I want to marry you,you deserve that much.We've been together for a while I don't want to wait anylonger.Ungu Mam' Omntana wam,now I want you to be my wife.

Me:Reece we still young for all of this,We aren't ready to be parents yet now you want us to get married.

Him:Alona there's no perfect age for doing all this,we can do it together.Why wait ?

Me:Reece.

Him: Okay Alona.

He said going to his closet while I sat on the bed. He came out dressed, Taking his phone and car keys from the dresser, he headed towards the door.

Me: Uyaphi?

Him: Out.

He said slamming the door shut after him.

I sighed and also got up after changing into his baggy shirt and gutter pants that I had to roll on the waist so they could fit me.

I had waited for Reece last night till I fell asleep and he didn't come back. Taking my phone on the night dress checking for any missed calls seeing as I left a few voice notes on his phone since ebenga bambi phone, and none

I sighed.

I was about to get up when my baby started kicking



Me: Ow that hurts. Good morning mommy's Angel, daddy is not here with us this morning, see ?

I giggled at my craziness. Oh well I was bonding with my baby.

I had freshened up earlier to calm myself, I was restless and I had to keep my mind from running on it's own.

I went home in the afternoon.

I had been woken up by my ringing phone as I was napping. Opening my eyes as I yawned

Me: Hello.

Caller: Reece has been shot.

My eyes shot open at that becoming fully awake

Me: WHAT ? NO, NO, NO!

I screamed out, As I fumbled to get up

Me: Will he be Okay, Where is he?

Zane:His house,he refuses to go to the hospital.

[11/10, 18:22] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 91

I was at Reece's house.

Zane: We usually have a gang doctor but he's currently out of the country and he didn't tell us,Reece is going to cut his head off when he catches him. But I had to call in his private doctor

Me: Dr wats ?

Scratching the back of his head,he nods.

So he knows.

Dr wats is the one who Reece has taken me to for a check up and I suspected that they have something going on.

I didn't say anything as I went up stairs heading to Reece's room.

I opened the door. Seeing her sitting on a chair besides Reece who was laying on the bed.

Her hand was lightly placed on his and in the middle of a conversation,that stopped though as they saw me and she fumbled up

Him: Thanks you for the hospitality treatment Eve.

Her: It's what you pay me for. You should heal soon though,and take care of your self , stay in bed

Him: I will Eve.

He said politely

Oh wow

She headed out,passing by me as she offered a genuinely smile which I failed to give back.She closed the door.

I went to stand beside him.

Me: Dr wats.. hu ?

Him: She's been a great help

Me: I'm sure..even on first name basis

He sighed.

Him: Are you here to check up on me or to start a fight,couse if so then I suggest that you leave.

Ouch that stung,I wasn't going to apologies for my curiosity.

Me: Okay.

I was about to head out when the door opened from outside and in came his brother.

Him: You already leaving?

Me: You r brother prefers 'Eve' here instead of me

Reece: Alona I never said that.

Me: Wel-

I stopped mid sentence as I felt my baby kicking.

Zane put his hand on my stomach,I don't know when Reece got to me to also feel it.

I smirked though as my baby stopped.

Reece: Come on baby kick for your daddy.

And indeed,I wince a little. It was no longer cute couse it hurt now.

Him: Oh Shit!, let daddy feel your best shot.

I heard Zane chuckle beside us as I glared at Reece.

I took his hands off and was about to leave when he pulled me back

Him: Princess,I'm sorry for snapping at you.

I shook my head

Suddenly I heard him wince as a look of pain masked his features,he had his hand on his

shoulder

I quickly went to stand beside him asking if he was okay.

I helped him sit on the bed,he immediately pinned me down.

"I'll leave you to it"

I heard his brother chuckle as he went out.

Him: Sorry for being an Ass,Princess yam.

Me: If you take us out tomorrow for shopping then I might consider it.

Him: I would but, I can't really be seen with you in this state

Me: Reece you ashamed of me ?

He shook his head as he pecked my lips.

Him: No Princess. Look,it could be dangerous for you and the baby. You know I've got enemies out for me and they'd do anything to get to me,I'm just trying to protect you.

Me: You going to protect me. ?Till when  
Reece,till when are we going to live our lives in  
fear ? Why can't we just be free and be like  
every other couple out there

Him: That's because we different from them.

Me: Bad different.

I sighed

Me: I hate this

I said pushing him off me and burying my head  
under a pillow.

Him: Alona.

He turned me so I could look at him,he pinched  
my cheek

Him: Awuse pink(i)

Him: Lets Shop for you online,in London. I'll help  
you pick.

Me: Really ?

Him: Anything to make you happy.

I smiled at him.

Me: Okay later. Now you need to tell me what happened with this (pointing to his shoulder)

Him: This,na just a small bullet wound,it should heal soon then I it'll probably scar but I'll tattoo it

He told me all that happened why he left me at the house alone and didn't come back and how he got shot.

Me: If you could have seen the way I was so scared when I got that phone call from your brother,you know..This made me think how I could not live without you,what it would do if you were to .. Look I don't want that,even if it happens then at least I have a piece of you

I said looking at baby bump

Me : Actually I want to have all of you. Reece,I love you and I can't begin to imagine spending the rest of my life without you.I don't want



anyone else but you. I love you, you and your perfect imperfections. You all that I need. I took my time and thought about your proposal, if it still stands.. Yes. Yes I'll mar-

And before I could even finish, he kissed me. After a while he got off the bed and went to his drawer and came back with the ring, getting on his knees once again

I watched as he put the ring on my finger. he got back up and wiped the tears off my eyes as he kissed my nose.

His hand on my stomach.

I was happy.

Him: Mrs Cruz, God it feels great already.

He said kissing me one more time before laying me on the bed and we ...

Not Edited.

[11/10, 18:23] +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 92

I woke up earlier on when I felt cold,like bendingo mbathanga ot something.

Only to find myself naked,Reece's in a comfortable position in between my legs and currently so focused on my stomach,his hands placed on either side of it.

Rubbing the sleep off my eyes

Me:What are you doing ?

Him:Ndincokola no pumpkin (Chatting with Pumpkin)

Me:Uyandi godolisa(I'm cold)

Him: Phethwe ngu mona(You just jelous) ..Okau where were we ? Oh I can't wait till you born,daddy's gonna spoil your rotten

I sighed

Him:Now aren't you going to kick for your dad

He asks,waiting for a moment

Him:I guess not.

He plants a kiss on tha bump before coming  
back up to peck my lips

Him:Good morning Mrs Cruz.

Me:Indeed,Worse someone is in a good mood  
today.

Him:You can't blame me,Last night was  
priceless,and this morning i'm waking up next  
to my fiance ,with my baby.

He winks at me

I cooe at him and he arches his eyebrow up,I  
chuckle

Me:We hungry

Him:Lets shower first then we'll go for  
breakfast

After Showering,Reece was by the balcony

talking with someone on the phone while I sat on the bed with one leg up trying to lotion my feet but it was almost impossible.

I heard him chuckle behind me and I turned to glare at him,raising his hand up in surrender

Him:Let me help you

Me:This is all your fault.

He took the bottle and started to lotion then suddenly he opened my legs up while I lay down and him inbetween.

He put my leg over his shoulder while his hands put lotion on my inner thigh,his hand running around my part,rubbing it.

I let out a moan and he smirked.

Reece knew just the right buttons to press to turn me on.

.....

My body didn't listen as another orgasm was

about to irrupt.

"Reece plea-se"

Reece went down on me three times making me cum each time, Now being the fourth time I was beyond exhausted and it seems like the more i begged him to stop the more he enjoyed himself.

Him: Please what Princess ? Just come all over my mouth, don't hold it in let it go.

His husky voice

Me: Reece I'm tired.

I pleaded, feeling my walls tightening once again. He was seriously going to be the death of me if he continued his 'Foreplay' as he liked to call it. How he can just hikack my body and do as he pleases..

Him: Cum for me princess.. you taste so fucking good.

His tongue continued to lick and suck on my

very sensitive clit and with one last lick I came undone.

Me:Ugh! Reece.

I laid there panting while I tried to control my breathing.

He sat up looking down on me,Licking his lips he smirked.

Him:You taste so good Princess.I can't wait until I'm deep inside you that you will be screaming my name louder than you were now.

I was too tired right now.

He took my hand in his pulling it down to his hardened part

Him:This is how hard and turned you have.

.....

My eyes fluttered open slowly then shut again as the sunlight blinded me. I felt so worn out that I know I could sleep for the rest of the

week.

Putting the covers over my head,I closed my eyes once again.

Him:I know you are awake princess.

I feel the side of the bed dip

Him:Alona if you don't get up and get something in your stomach,I'm going to have my way with you and make you cum so many fucking times that i'll have you speaking in tongues

Sighing,I pull the covers off my face and glare at him.

Him:Now come on,lets get something to eat for you and my baby,you must be hungry after releasing so many times

Me: Stop being perverted Reece.

He chuckles.

Getting up

Him: You'll find me in my study when you done, I'll drive you home so you could get changed and we'll visit my gran (Grandmother) yeah ?

I nod, pecking my lips I watch him as he heads out

Damn his physique and the tattoos :p

After all that.

Later Reece took me to his grandmother's place. She welcomed me with open arms and I was really glad.

I really had a great time, I helped her cook dinner seeing as she didn't know that we were coming because 'Matthias' (Reece's second name) ,didn't tell her.

After dinner he drove me home while he had to go to the gang.

Getting inside.

Me: Honey i'm home.



I yelled out to Oz but instead mom's head peeked out from the kitchen

Me: Oh.Mom.

Her:This side baby.

I went to find her baking,ahh the smell. Homely

We caught up,mother and daughter conversation

I ended up showing her the ring and she was happy for me though she felt Reece and I were both still young we weren't ready for marriage.I told her we taking our time and we know what we doing.

I went upstairs to look for my brother and I found him playing pool in his entertainment room.

Him: Babe here.

He gave a stick so that I could be the second player,I knew how to play because he taught me.

I took it but he didn't let go as he was stuck staring at my hand

Him: That bastard propose.

Maybe this was his way of saying congratulations, or he could go and start a fight with him.

Their friendship was weird

I don't know what he thinks.

[11/10, 18:23] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 93

Him: That bastard proposed.

I couldn't quite read his expression right now.

The next thing I know he storms out furiously and I was behind him trying to stop him.

Me: Oz come on, where are you going ?

He slams the front door as he went out.

"Yintoni Alona" I heard mom ask behind me

Me:He saw the ring and he got furious,I think he's going to Reece,mom they'll fight

I said in a rush

She took my hand and went to sit me down

Her:Calm down,you'll upset the baby

Me: But m-

Her: Suyingena Alona Uyamazi uBhut' wakho  
(Don't interfere,you know him),Always trying to look out for you.

Her:Just go to your room and I'll bring you some muffins and a warm milkshake Okay ?

I nod.I went to my room,changing to my nightwear before getting under the covers.

I took my phone,logging in on facebook just to get my mind off things.

I replied to a few chats before deciding to take a picture of my ring and sent it to Romeo.

It wasn't a few minutes before my phone

rang,as I put the phone on my ear to answer.I  
put it away from my ear as Romeo let out a  
scream of excitement.

.....

I woke up in the middle of the night,this was the  
time where I always got hungry.

I wore my gown,lazily walking down the steps  
and as the lounge came into view.

My brother and Reece were sitting on their own.

A couple of beer cans in front of them,pizza  
boxes It was just messy.

I just shook my head at the view

Me:You'll clean up after yourselves right ?

They both turn to look at me

They just ignore me and turn back to watch  
tv.Okay,I was not needed here

I heated someone's left overs from the fridge  
and went up to eat in my room and when I was

done,I immediately fell asleep.

The couple of days went by with everything going smoothly.

I spent most of my time with Reece and I was more than happy,it's rare to get his full attention and these day i certainly had it.

We were currently coming from a photo shoot,you know those couples and baby bump kind of a thing.

After that,I had to beg him to go on a picnic with me.

He mumbled all the way there but here we were anyway setting up a spot we were going to sit in

We set up and settled down.

Him:I still don't understand why we have to go out and be seen by the whole town that we picnicking.For me,my image,it's really disgrading.

Me:Being with me is disgrading ?

Him: Princess come On,I meant it like..this isn't me

Me:You said you'd do anything to make me happy,this makes me happy and you just need to loosen up.

I said giving him a grape through mouth.

Him: First I had to go to strawberry farm,picking them and putting them in those ridiculous baskets.Took you out on ice skating,you made me go to that Circus carnival shit,paint balling(sighs) I could go all day and remind you.Now i'm here on picnic.Thee forme- ..gang Leader on a picnic :|

I stifled a giggle as he shook his head.

Him:What's next ?Making me build a ice rank so you can build a snow man.

He knew how much I loved ice.

Me:That won't be a bad idea.

Him:I won't,I'm done.

Me:You going to upset the baby.

He scratches the back of his head

Him:Longest in between nine months in my life.When are you due ?I've had enough.

I shrug

Me:About 93 days from here I think,you still there's still so much to come

Him:I never signed up for this

Me:Neither did I.

Him: Nc Nc nc I'm fu-

He trailed off as he stuck,looking somewhere with a confused face.I followed his gaze but I saw nothing

Me:Reece ?

I shook him and he snapped out of it.

Me:What is it ?

Him:I think I s-..

He looks back at the place

He clears his throat

Him:No,never mind..Nothing.,

He said running his hand on his face his supposedly to focus move.

Him:I have to meet the gang later,I'll drive you home okay ?

I nod.

Back on the drive home,I could see Reece's mind was somewhere else,like something was distracting him

Me:Are you sure that you fine ?

Him: Yes.

Me:But since we came from the park,you seem to be quiet.

He shook his head chuckling a little



Him:I just came from a picnic,I just can't believe it.That place is out of my comfort zone,I never thought i'd be the one to go.

It was quiet for a while

Me:You know I know you lying right ?

He parke outside the gate,as I now saw alot of cars parked but that didn't catch my attention right then.

He sighed

Him:Alona please just drop it.

Me:Wh-

Him:Alona.

Me: Okay Fine.

I opened the door to get out but he held me back.

Him:You mad at me ?

I shrugged,he put the tip of his finger under my chin to turn me to look at him and he started

kissing me.

Him:Let me walk you inside.

As I opened the door

I heard a shout/scream of "Suprise",A suprise baby shower.

My brother came up and walked out with Reece saying they we1e having their own party.

Reece kissed my cheek as they went out.

OH,this place was packed,this was going to be a long day.

[11/10, 18:23] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 94

Baby shower

After.

That night,I was so tired like i have been ran up by a tryck.

As I said before the place was packed,I don't

know when Romeo got hold of my phone but somehow he managed to even get some of my highschool friends to attend,it was like a highschool reunion.Lots of presents were still in my room,I did open some and I got baby stuff,so cute it brought me to tears.Even though I got some stuff that I already had seeing as I have went for baby shopping with my brother,but I didn't mind.The more the merrier.

The guest rooms were occupied also because some of my friends asked for a sleep over,they lived about a few hours away so they leaving the following morning.

IT was in the Middle of the night whenn I heard a knock on my bedroom door,it was so disturbing

Groaning in frustation for being woken up from my sleep.

I got up and wore my sleepers that were beside the bed not bothering to wear a gown over my

sleep wear. I opened the door to find Reece leaning on the door frame his head bowed down and his hands on either side of his pockets.

His blood shot eyes meeting mine,he was drunk an smelled strongly of alcohol

Him: Princess

He slurred out as he walked in and almost lost balance.

I've never seen him this drunk,it was my first and it kinda got me curious.He usually have a glass or two whenever he's stressed.A couple of beers with his friend.Now how many did he consume ?

He draped his arm over my shoulder,placing my hand on his waist to try help him walk.He didn't put his weight on me.

I helped him to bed as he quickly collapsed on the bed and closed his eyes tiredly

I take off his shoes,taking his shirt off and I was about to unbutton the jeans when he pulled me to him.

We would be face to face but then there's this huge baby bump standing on the way.

I lay on his side,he kissed me and I could taste the alcohol on the tip of my tongue but i didn't mind .

I pulled away.

Me:Let's just sleep,I'm sure you tired.

Him:I love you

He turned also on his side,his hand snaking under my dress to place it on my bump.

He rolled the dress all up to expose it then he started talking to it.

I waited and waited till he passed out.

.....

I woke up almost in the afternoon the following

day,I did sleep tired after all

Reece wasn't beside me.I got up blindly and bumped into the boxes on the floor,I grumbled profanities under my breath as I made my way to the bathroom.I did my morning routine,wearing a gow over and went to the kitchen to get breakfasy.

Finding my brother and my fiance,got it felt good calling him that.

They were hungover.

Reece wore only his jeans,no shirt and he had his head buried on the kitchen counter while he sat on the high chairs.My brother,only on his briefs sitting on the counter beside Reece with his one leg up while the other hanging down.

Melissa was by the stove trying to make breakfast.

I shook my head.

Oz:Man.Remind me not to ever dring alcohol

again,I'm done with it.

He shuts his eyes closed trying to regain a clear sight.

Reece:Sure,and I'll be father christmas next christmas.

Oz:You know I blame you,you owe me for taking those 20 Shooters

I grimaced

Reece:Not now

Me:Were you guys trying to kill yourselves or what ?

They tensed at hearing my voice.Trying to look at me,they couldn't even open their eyes fully.

I was hot on their ears through out the breakfasy and mom came and joined me and let's just say this is the morning they will never forget.

After breakfast,I was with Reece in my room

..well he was taking a cold shower in the bathroom

He came out in his naked glory and I quickly shielded my eyes

Me:Geez Reece,you could have atleast wrapped a towel

Him:It's nothing you haven't seen before baby,anyway You'll be waking up to this every morning so get used to it.

He said collapsing on the bed,holding me from behind and I could feel his guy poking me

I got up and yelped in suprise couse I wasn't expecting it,he burst out laughing.

Him:Look princess,I need you to find me a set of clothes and my shades on the booth

Me:Why do you even keep clothes in the booth

Him:I used to-..you know when I come from the warehouse I'd be all bloody so i'd get rid of them and wear the cleaner set.Now please go I



really need to leave,Love.

Folding my arms to my chest

Me:I didn't send you out to get drunk,you go get them

Him:You know I have sensitive eyes. I even said please..

.....

Later

I was in the new nursely room that my brother had made for the baby.As a present from him,it was breathtakingly beautifully designed,he misy have sure spent Alot.

I also got the same from Reece only in his house.

Everyone had left earlier on and now i was on my own boredso I decided to finish opening my presents.

I was halfway through,A red medium box

cought my eye.It was beutifully illustrated that I was even more curious.

Opening it,a small glass frame with a bullet plastered into it

A note attached."CAN'T WAIT,i'LL GROOM THEM EVEN BETTER"

It had dried out blood.

[11/10, 18:23] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 96

The Note.

I called Reece immediately seeing as I couldn't reach my brother.

He did come and I wasted no time in showing him it.

I watched as he took the piece of paper from me,furrowing his eyebrows but not in confusion more like recognition.

He traced the paper with the tip of his finger

He shook his head and murmured something I  
couldn't quiet catch

Me:Reece ?

Him:Someone is trying to scare you

Me:Whoever it is then is succeeding,what are  
you going to do ?

His lip formed a thin line. Sighing,he took my  
head sitting me down on the bed

Him:I need to tell you something

I nod,telling him to proceed

Him:It's been a while now

He started to say.

Him: Lately you have seen me busy,thinking  
that I'm with the gang - Actually I have been.But  
not working with it Instead Working to get out  
of it.I've been signing alot of papers,made a  
vow.I'm happy to say I have managed to stay

out of trouble. I have started the process long ago and it's not done yet seeing as it will take a while, but I'll get there.

I'm working more on the legitimate businesses of mine. I'm doing this for you, the baby.. to start on a clean slate, to try the normal life though that is almost impossible to have that with me. Look you worth everything, but I can't jeopardise this now, I've come this far princess I can't go back.

It was silent as I took in what he said, something I never thought I'd hear coming from him. Quitting the life.

Wrapping my arms around his torso, bringing him in a hug

I pecked his lips

Me: I understand and I'm so proud of you, I couldn't ask for a better man to father, my baby.. you're the best

Him:Yeah ?

I nod.

Sighing

Me:I'll the police then

Him:I think that's best for now.

Me:Those dummies will sure take their time,but anyway should be warned that if something happens to me,they'll know I had a creeper

Him: Princess I won't let anything happen to you,I'll be forced to take matters on my own hand if you don't get help.

..

I was in the kitchen with Reece.

Making Chickem thigh Sosa ties with Coleslaw to go with.A light and Simplified dish.

Him:So is there anything else you don't have and might need for the baby ?

I shook my head

Me: Not any that I can think of

Him: You let me know.

Me: What about the baby name ?

Him: It's Pumpkin

I punched his shoulder playfully, which ended with me hurting my self

Me: Are you made out of steel or something ?

I asked in annoyance

Him: I thought you knew you'd never ever get violent with me, it only brings you pain.

He smirked and I sulked, giving me a peck on the lips

Me: On a serious note though we need to think of baby names.

Him: Sure but for now let's eat I'm hungry.

After we had early dinner I packed my overnight

bag after texting my brother telling him that I'm sleeping over at Reece.

Picking a few snacks from his kitchen we went up to his room to cuddle in bed.

Me:She'll be beautiful like her mother

Him:Who said it's a She ?

Me: I'm the mother and I can feel it

Him:It's a boy

Me:Not-

Him:Is

Me:Not

Him:Whatever but the baby will look like me

Me:We'll see.

Him:After this one we doing another one eh ?

He wiggled his eyebrow

Me:How many children do you want ?

Him: A whole soccer team

I glare at him and he chuckles.

...

In the middle of the night I was woken up by Reece's ringing phone.

Rubbing the sleep from my eyes, I yawn and start looking on the side of the bed, it was empty and I start looking around

I see him stuck at the door as I have caught him coming in.

He was all dressed up, only then I noticed he wasn't sleeping next to me all this while instead he sneaked out immediately when I closed my eyes, sleep overtaking me..that's when he took his chance

He murmured 'Shit' under his breath as he has gotten caught because of the loud ringing phone

He took it out, staring at the screen without any means to answer it



Me: Phendula i Phone Reece (Answer)

He shook his head

Him:Not important

Me: Who calls in the middle of the night,if it ain't that important ?

Him: Nope it's not,Did I wake you up ? I'm sorry baby

He said walking up to me to peck my lips but I turned my head to look away

Me:Where are you coming from at this time ?

Him:I just went out for fresh air

I snorted

Me:And you waited till I fell Asleep which was 3 hours ago(After Checking time) and you come back in sneakly

Him:I told y-

Me:We both know you not telling the truth,Are you cheating on me ?

Him: No I'm not

Me:I call bullshit !

It was silent for a moment,I shouldn't have.

Him:Uthini ? (What was that ?)

He asked taking a step closer. I swallowed nervously as I shut my mouth

Him:Are we having a fight Alona ?

He asked in his deep voice so low that I almost didn't hear him.

[11/10, 18:23] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 96

Reece:Are we having a fight Alona?

He asked in his deep voice so low that I almost didn't hear him.

Gulping nervously.

He knew better than to try to hit me right now,I knew he wouldn't he was just trying to scare me

right now and it was actually working.

Walking past him bumping his shoulder on purpose.

I went into the bathroom to take a shower, I just needed it to cool me off.

It's been a while now sitting under the shower. Letting the water run from my head to my body as I sat down miserably hugging my legs to my chest.

The water was now running cold but I didn't mind. I just felt emotional and was crying, watching my tears blend in a blur with the water.

Suddenly the shower curtain opened, I just knew it was Reece so I didn't bother to look up.

Switching the tap off, He just got in fully dressed and he didn't mind being wet as he picked me up bridal style

Wrapping me in a towel as he went out.

Gently placing me on the bed,he continued to wipe me dry,he lotioned me then dressed me in my undergarments before putting on one of his T-shirts.

He struggled to tie my hair but finally got the hang of it and I almost wanted to laugh.

Tucking me in bed

He got in behind me after changing out of his own clothes,Cuddling me till i fell asleep again.

Waking up in the morning,smelling a sweet faint aroma of pancakes or was is waffles,I don't know but it made my tummy grumble.

I went to the bathroom to do my morning routine wearing my sleepers and went out.

Checking my self in the full length mirror,Reece's navy blue t-shirt covering up my hands,it was that long but i managed to roll it up.

Going in the kitchen,finding Reece sitting on the

conter chair with his laptop.Hearing "He'll never change,whatever happens don't let him control you again,don't let him get inside your head and turn you back to w-

Sha stopped,it was Reece's granny. I just interrupted them,well i didn't know that she was going to be here early in the morning.Oh well I should at least wore appropriately,at least a gown on this.

Pointing backward with my thumb as I took a few steps backs.

Her:No -you come in,I made breakfast specially for you and my grandchild.

She said smiling genuinely,She was really pretty.

Him:Ma,what about me ?

Her:I don't care,I'm sure you don't even cook for her you make her do the cooking while seeing her situation.

Him: That's n-

Her: Shut up and don't you dare backchat me  
Young man.

She smacked him on the shoulder lastly and I giggled as He rubbed on the spot pouting lightly. You see another side of Reece when he was with Her, a side you would have thought he had, He adored her and he was so carefree. With me, he just tried.

She took my hand and sat me down.

Her: How did you sleep ?

She looked me straight in my Reddish puffy eyes before turning to look at Reece.

Her: What did you do ?

Opening his mouth and closing it shut again

Her: Actually it doesn't matter, Apologise

He sighed, coming to kneel before me, taking my hands to his and kissing the back

Him:I know I was wrong and I'm sorry.

He said politely,I glared at him shortly trying to say that I wasn't done with him

Me: Okay.

He got up pecking my cheek and sitting beside me while intertwining our fingers

...

Later on we decide on having a mini brie outside.It was the three of us but now with Zane with Khayone ,My brother and Romeo.

Reece drove his grandmother home later on

The guys and I sat inside.

I had Khayone on top of me as we lay on the couch.He bumped his head up and down on my bump now and then.

I stopped him holding him to my side but he trashed out,Ruffling his hair as I chuckled

Me:Little troubler er ?

I said as I got up handing him to my brother while I went to the kitchen with Romeo to the kitchen so that I could cook pap to go with the meat

He gawked at the design of the kitchen

Him:Wow.You living the dream

Me:Yeah,whatever.So tell me what's up with you lately ?

Him:Family that's what.

Wiping myu hands clean after i washed them.Turning to look at his troubled face

Me:What happened ?

Him: Dad feels like I'm too much of a weakling as I have never brought a girl home.He decided to hook me up with his business partner's doighter and I feel some arragement coming.

Me:I thought h-

Him:He doesn't know that I'm gay,only my mom



does and she decided to keep quiet. You don't know what would happen if he found out.

I didn't know how to comfort him either than giving him a hug,

Me: You stop all this before it goes too far, find a way to approach it and tell them.

Him: Okay.

After cooking we our separate ways.

I was with Reece in bed and beside me.

I had my back to him while his chin was rested on the crook of my neck peeking at me.

I felt his hand creeping up my thigh, going further to touch my part, I held his hand and took it out.

Him: Yho Alona.

Me: You leave me alone

Him: You still mad, I said I was sorry

Me: For ?

Him:What you mad at me for ?

Me:Lying.

Him:I-

Him>Last night I had to meet with some guy whose keeping a tag at my father.He told me he's out from Jail.

Not edited.

[11/10, 18:23] [ +263 77 250 3508 : Insert 97

That day after Reece informed me about his father.I lived my life on the look out.I wasn't eager to meet the man especially given his past.

I was currently sat and in front of me was my laptop as i looked up jobs to take next year on the internet.

I was still at Reece's house and it's been a few hours since he went out,leaving me all by

myself bored then i decided to pass time with this.

When i got tired of looking at the screen,i decided to make myself milkshake and sprinkled some sprinkles on top before going back to the lounge

I found Reece squinting his eyes on the screen looking at the laptop probably reading over

Me: O you back.

He turned to look at me,he threw his car keys on the table.

Him:You looking for work ?

He asked in a not so happy way.I nod before going to sit down and closing my laptop

Him:Why ?

I look up at him in confusion

Me:What do you mean Why ?

Him:You feel like i can't provide for you or what ?

Me:Reece stop making everything about you.I need to make myself ,education useful.I went ro school,Graduated and got my degree now why would I waste my family's efforts to just sit around and become a housewife ?I want to work and be able to also provide for them,to make them proud.I can't be dependant on you or anyone for the rest of my life.

Him:It's too soon,what about the baby ?

Me:I wont be the first one to work and take care of a baby

Him:A newborn,Our first baby Alona he'll need our full attention.

I shrug

Me:I'll cope.

Him:You'll cope ?Alona you'll not fucken neglect my baby.

Me:I won't.Look I think I'm perfectly capable of doing thsi.

Him: You stop being selfish.

Me: Selfish ?

Him: Yes. Now you gonna stay put and take care of the baby then when you fit enough maybe you can start working

Me: It's not your decision to make.

Him: Don't try me Alona.

I furiously got up and packed my stuff away before heading upstairs.

Him: Don't you fucken dare walk away from me whilst i'm talke to you.

I ignored him.

Him: Alona.

I didn't stop

Suddenly I felt a grip on my arm, turning me abruptly that I lost hold of my laptop and it hit the floor

Me: Let go of me I heard you clearly Reece, You'll

have the last I get it.

I pulled my arm out of his and continued my way up.

I went to take a nap so I could keep myself calm.

I woke up later on to go to the kitchen to start cooking dinner only Reece beat me to it as I found him sweating his ass off on the stove. He was with my brother who had a bowl of popcorns and a beer on the side, with a bored expression as he watched his friend cook

I walked to him, hugging him from behind

Me: It's good to see you.

Him: Really, don't act like you miss me when you haven't went back home for a while or at least called me.

He shrugged me off as he tried to look serious

I chuckled

Me:I've been busy.

Him:With what? Taking care of shitface.

He said directing his eyes at Reece who was glaring at him.

Me:No,and you call him that. Ah..I've been job hunting.

Him:That's good

He said giving me a side hug.Atleast someone was happy.

Him:But I still don't like that you spend time with him instead of me.

He playfully scowled

Me:You don't have time for me you always busy.

Him:True i'm always away but'

Me:No buts.

Him:I still don't think he's good for you.It's a pity that he's going to be my brother in law,you can still change your mind babe.

Reece:You know I'm still here you shit.

Me:You guys please don't start.

I said going over to check what Reece was cooking.

After we ate dinner,My brother left and Reece and I decide to have an early night

We talked out our earlier argument so we were good.

I was snuggled up on Reece and he didn't want to let go as I suddenly had an urge to go pee.

After some threatning he let go and I quickly walked to the bathroom.Nothing came out,this got me confused becouse I was sure that I wanted to pee

As I walked back into the room,I stopped midway as I felt liquid run down my legs.

Only then everything clicked

Me:My water just broke.



Him:What water ?

I was silent.

He turned to look at me so quick.

Him:Holy hell

Me: Don't freak out Reece

Him:Holy fucking hell

Me:Reece

Him:Holy Shit !

We had a hard time getting to the hospital because we were arguing all the way.

[11/10, 18:23] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 97-  
Continued

I thought when I got there i'd be taken into the room to give birth but unfortunately my baby wasn't ready.Here I was pacing on the hospital

corridor

I had removed any sort of clothing I had,I was wearing only a satin gown cause I was really hot.

Reece had went off somewhere after he called some relatives.

He came up to me he had a cup of cofee and a plastic cup with water that had ice,I glared up at him and I saw worry written on his features.

Me:Water?Amanzi Reece ?

I gritted through my teeth,I slapped the cup away from me and watched the water spill out

Me:I'm in pain right now,becouse of you(Digging/pointing my finger on his chest)this is your fault,It's all your fault ! And you have the nerve to give me water !Freaking water Reece ?You go to hell with it.

The water part seemed to aggravate me more.Reece just looked at me in confusion.

I so hated him right now.I started hitting him on his chesr using my fists,he seemed unaffected.

I screamed profanities telling hum how much it was his fault.

When I was taken in becouse they felt like I was ready.

I gave birth to my baby and I thought it was all over then,until the nurse said in the most calmest voice that there's another head coming.

Ha!

I was pushing and pushing and all while long I squeezeed Reece's hand that was holding mine until it became pale.he'lll be lucky if I don't break his bones

It was his fault,that's what I screamed through out.

[11/10, 18:23] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 98

The machine in the Dr room was not accurate because we didn't know that there were two until after the first baby was born

The labour was extremely short and difficult within an hour the babies were born, I went from experiencing minimal pain to extreme pain with little time to adjust.

I woke up in pain the following morning, it felt like I've been sleeping for days without waking up. I had a hard time adjusting my eyes to the light but I finally got the hang of it. I tried sitting up, but I started hurting and so almost went back down but Reece helped me up and to sit.

He helped me drink water. Clearing my throat

Me: Where are they ?

My voice came out small and raspy

Him: In the hospital nursery. They are perfectly

fine.

I nod

Me:Girls ?

He shook his head with a huge grin

Him:Boys,Identical twin I can't even tell them apart

I groaned at the thought that they were boys and he chuckled.

Him:You almost scared me when you blacked out yesterday,I thought I was gonna lose you

Me:Why ?

Him:In most case woman aren't strong enough after giving birth so they end up giving out

He sighed

Me:Guess I'm stronger then.

He nod

Him:Thank you.

He kissed the back of my hand.

Me:For ?

Him:For them,best gift ever .I promise,I'll always be there for you guys.Ndiphilela nina ngo.

He was about to say something when the door bust open and in came my brother,followed by my mom

She smacked his back.

Her:Ukrwada !

I watched as he pouted

Her:Baby you awake.

She came up to hug me.

Her:How do you feel ?

Me: Drained out and still in pain but i'll be fine

Her:They tell me you did good yesterday.

Me:I tried.

I offered a small smile.

A nurse came in later on, holding what I'm guessing my bundles of joys on her arms, wrapped in baby blue fur baby wraps.

I opened up my arms to take them, I struggled to hold them both but mom helped me out until I felt comfortable.

I awed at their pink faces, dark bushy curls, Tiny hands, Swollen and puffy eyes and Reddish tiny lips

God they were adorable.

I felt connected to them instantly, I felt Reece's hand wipe a tear from my face.

Oz: Double the trouble double the mischief.

Mom: Decided on any names yet ?

I shook my head while Reece nod

Him: Second names.. Carnello and Othello. The younger one is Carnello and the Older one is Othello which means prosperouse, that one came from my grandmother. I'll explain to you

later.

Me:I like them.

I smiled up at him

Me:I'm guessing you already have their first names.

I asked looking at mom.

Her:Alunamda and Linamandla

Me:Alunamda Carnello Cruz and Linamandla Othello Cruz.

Only they'll use the surname once we get married,which is a few months away.

Oz:The Cruz twins,Man this shit is cute.

He said grinning.

We spent few minutes with the twins before they were taken to the nursery.My mom and Oz had left earlier.We were to be discharged the following day and I couldn't wait to take my



babies home with me, though I was scared Mom will be there

I had just got done bathing and I wore the tuck in belt to hold on my stomach, trying to put it back to its normal shape.

Reece has been with me all the way, he goes back to his house to freshen up then come back immediately, he never wanted to leave our side for long.

**BACK HOME.**

I decided to give breastfeeding a try. Alunamda would suckle for a little while but wouldn't stay on my breast for long. Lina wouldn't even dare suckle so we decide to buy some formula milk since both of them were not so keen on being breast fed.

I was alone in the house and have put them in their car seats as I sat between them on a cushion with a bottle in each of my hands,that's the best way I've come up with,it was pretty useful when I was alone at the house.

I heard a knock at the door instead of going to open I just shouted for whoever to come on.

It was Reece.

He had some brown Shopping pape bag,he put it on the table and came to sit down in front of us after he pecked my lips.

Him:How are you holding up ?

I just shrug

Him:You look tired

Me:I am,they're a little troublesome and we stayed up all night with Oz seeing as they din't want to sleep.

I said taking out the bottle from thei tiny mouths,I unbuckled Alu(Alunamda) from his

seat so I could burp him.

Reece was just looking at me,he was afraid of even holding them yet because they were so tiny he felt like he'll bruise them.

Him:Why don't you go nap and I'll look after them

Me:Are you sure ?

Him:Yeah,I mean I'll wake you up if I can't handle it.They're full anyway maybe they'll fall asleep shortyl.

After leaving the twins with him and telling him what to do.I went o my room and immediately dozed off.

I woke up later on to find them asleep next to me,Lina was snuggled up to Alu who was snuggling to me.

I awed at them,I heard a snap shot,finding reece taking a picture.

My mom was back earlier than usual, she was cooking dinner and she gave Reece some list for him to go to the chemist tomorrow morning so that he can get a few bottles of medicine for the twins.

[11/10, 18:23] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert 98  
Continued

Oz: Where are my little monkeys ?

He asked as he made his way in, he was called them that because they were so hairy.

Me: You call them that one more time I swear I'll shove this monitor up your As-

I stopped midway as I remembered mom's presence. Oz smirked

Me: The twins are sleeping.

Oz: You should consider him (Pointing Reece) to stay so that you could wake him up in the middle of the night when the twins wake up. I

can't be out here doing night shifts because when you two decided to play a game of Soccer, you know 'Kicking and Scoring, Catching' I wasn't there.

He mumbled.

I stifled a laugh.

Reece: You better shut up.

He gritted through his teeth.

Mom shook her head side to side as she looked at her Son.

Mom: Yazi (You Know) Ozamokuhle.. I'm still looking for your parents.

I burst out laughing.

[11/10, 18:24] 📞 +263 77 250 3508 📍 : #FGL99

Days Week Months, 3 months later.

I could say everything was great so far.

The twins were growing to be more cuter and they much more looked like their father,It hurt.No,don't look at me like that,Ofcourse I was hurting becouse I carried them for 9 months 9 FREAKIN months,went through the painfull labour and then they look like him.I swear i could easily deny them,the worst part I couldn't even tell them apart.Maybe as time goes,I'll be able to spot some differances.

My brother said he knew how to tell them apart,I asked him how and he said "The other is a little more of a monkey than the other" meaning the other is harrier than the other

:|

My mother said that Lina,,the eldest.Had a tiny heart shaped like birth mark on the top of his hand.

Imagine now that I have a little misunderstanding with the twins and I first have to check their hands.

:/

I asked Reece to cut the other ones hair to make it easier,"You start with yours" he had answered.

Anyway the twins were adorable though.Their daytime naps weren't synchronized at the momemt.While one naps the other is awake and vice versa and I think it was better that way becouse it can be a little bit troublesome when they both are awake.

Reece.

Reece would trade the world for his babies, know what I mean ?

He was always there,he's take a bullet a and release one for them. There was nothing he wouldn't do for them.

He was so commited,he loved them dearly and whole heartedlt.

I had no words to describe their

relationship,The bond it was so real and adorable.

Being young,a mother of two,It has taken it's toll and it wasn't easy but with the support of my family and friends I knew I could do it.

My brother has been so helpful and supportive,so is my mother.

It felt good to know that I had all these people by my side to help me,I was really gratefull

Romeo,on his free time he'd visit and not me,No. The twins,he had this crazy obsession of always taking swlfies with them.

He'd dress them up and take alot of pictures,he posts them online and says they bring him alot of fame.Actually the cruz family brings him popularity

Yeah you could say my 4 moths olds were getting famous.



Romeo even proposed a deal,saying he wants to sign them up for baby modelling deal,how he was thinking of designing them clothes seeing as he was a fashion designer.You know what ?,he was crazy.

Reece and I were the youngest married couple by now,Husband and wife,I was finally mrs cruz.

It was the best wedding any girl could ever dream of,getting married abroad.

One twist,Reece and my brother came late on the ceremony.Instead of the bride being late ,nope.It was the groom and his best man.

Appaarently they went out clubbing the previous night,they got so drunk they struggled to wake up in the morning.

They came to the ceremony wearing some Jamaican/Miami shades.Their tailor made suits.

Seeing as they were late,Apparently they forgot

to put on shirts under the suits.

I don't know whether I should believe the lateness excuse or it was the rebels inside of them and they planned it.

They decided not to wear the shirts to complete the whole suit look, their well defined tattooed chests were out for display. They so got it from me after the Ceremony.

All in all it was one of the best days that I'll put on the list among the other, to never forget. Even though not everyone was present, seeing as they couldn't afford a plane ticket. They sent out their love.

I was currently the happiest girl.

Falling for the gang leader brought me pain, sadness at first but it also brought me happiness and purpose, Now he was no longer a Gang leader but a former Gang leader.

He wasn't about that life. We were starting a

new life, and left the old life behind.

If it follows us ? I guess we'll see.

But I was going to stay beside him through it all.

Ride or die.

[11/10, 18:24] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert  
100

Reece: Good morning Mrs. Cruz

I brushed the sleep off my eyes as I sat up and turned to smile at him.

Me: Morning Mr Cruz

He pecks my lips

Him: I made you breakfast

Me: That's my dut-

He shook his head stopping me

Him: No it's not, anyway you're tired. Here.

He pointed to the tray on his side where there

was Whole wheat bread,a mini bowl for jam and butter on the side.Steaming creamed coffee and Chocolate chip pancakes,That's how I liked my breakfast,simple.

Me:Aww,thank you.Let me brush my teeth first and check on the twins

Him:No.I got it,you go freshen up

I got in the bathroom,did my morning routine and went out

Reece was sitting on the bed with the twins who were wide

Me:Were they crying ?

He shook his head

Him:Just Awake and eating each others hands.

Me:What happened to the sound they make when they wake up.

Him:They must be growing up.

I nod as I sat down,Kissing both their tiny lips

and I was about to take the tray..

Him:You're unfair.I only got to kiss your cheek but you kiss them on the lips

He pouted

Me: Okay then Big baby.

I said as I kissed him on the lips,turning into a full blown kiss until I pulled away and took my breakfast.

I spread the jam and butter on my bread,I took the first bite and was about to take the second when suddenly it fell right off my hand and to the tray.Hitting inside the cup making it spill a little.

I look at Alu,the one who coused the mess,then his father who was holding in a laugh

Me:You know,it's not funny Reece.

That's all it took for him to burst out laughing.Something he did more often lately

I looked at his closed eyes, his perfect straight teeth and the deep dimples. Gosh the guy was hot, to think he is all mine.

Him: I'm sorry Princess.

I continued to eat my half ruined breakfast while removing Alu and Lina from it now and then

I tried giving Alu a small piece of bread after wetting it and he choked. I got so scared because by then he turned even more red.

I had to stick my finger inside his mouth to take it out, I sighed when I got hold of it.

Him: Ufuna und'bulalela abantwana ngo ? (You want to kill my babies)

Me: Baya Bawa

Him: I wonder who they take after.

Me: Definitely not me.

Him: Sure.. Says the girl who always came to my

house after school for some goodies.

Me:You had some pretty good stuff

Him:Sure.

He said smirking,realizing that I just admitted it.

:|

In the evening,Reece stayed with the twins while he forcefully sent me to the Spa to get a full treatment.

I returned home later to find him Cooking.He had Alu/Lina I don't know which one,On a baby carrier attached to his front.You know those belt like things you usually put a baby in and attach it to your self ?Yeah

I laughed so hard that I had tears in my eyes as I put my hand on the side.

Me:What in the world do you think you doing ?

I asked heading towards him after catching my breath.

I kiss him on the lips while kissing the twin who had his medium hazel eyes drowsy with sleep.

Him: Cooking for my wife

I awwed at him

Me: I feel really love

I hug his side

Me: Where's his brother ?

Him: His granny went to put him on his cot

Me: Your gran, she's here ?

He nod

Me: God, let me just go change out of these

I said panicking. I was wearing high rise jeans and a off shoulder Olive green waterfall cropped top. My hair was straightened out ending on the middle of my back

Him: Princess, cool off. You look sexy on those tight ass fitting jeans, making my dick twitch just by looking at it



He winked

I nudged his side to shut him up

Me:That's the thing,It's innapro-

Him:Hey.You don't act likr one of those old bride,following rules and shit.We make our own rules,you young so you wear anything you want I don't mind,but you don't wear shorts,unless you with me.

"Yeah,tell her"

I turned to find granny smiling at us.I greeted her before offering to make her coffee.

She said she already had it.She took a sleeping twin from Reece and went with him upstairs.

Reece was dishing out.

Him:You and I are going out later ?

Me:Where to ?

Him:Just meeting the gang.

Me:I thou-

Him:They want to throw me some farewell shit.

Me:Why now ?It's been months since you quit.

Him:They thought I was going to change my mind and come back.

Me:But you didn't.

He nod.

Me:Who did you throw the ropes to anyway ?

Him:Since Zane refused,It's some guy called Juice.He's been by my side ever since i started.

I nod.

Me: Oh.Now if I go with you,what about the twins ?

Him: O'lady said she'll stay the night.

I didn't want to go,I hated being involved in the gang stuff and who knows what's gonna go down.

Me: Okay then.

Him:We wont be long.

He could probably could sense my discomfort.

I nod.

After eating,we went to change and went out.

...

[11/10, 18:24] [ +263 77 250 3508 ] : Insert  
100 Continued.

I thought when I got there it was all going to be party vibes,you know all those stickers and cool stuff.

But this was different,It was made for them.

These guys over here were scary.

Instead of hiding behind Reece I was beside him.I had to stay put.

It was all Whiskey and Cigars.Guns out for display,God what was I doing here ? Oh! Being the supportive Wife.

Came a part when they were car spinning and racing,it was fascinating until came a part where I had to get in a car with Reece who was going to spin it.

Instead of being the wimp,I got in.

I wasn't scared.

They had called him Ripper Cruz'

I had wondered why,partly was becouse when he spun for the longest time with the car,he had no seatbelt on

He took his gun to put it straight on the inside rooftop to fire shots,going through out,damaging the car.

It took a while for him to stop spinning,when we got out I was dizzy and started to shake,he passed me a bottle of water.

Not given time to adjust,he took me away from the car before throwing in a ball like thing that fell inside the car,it exploded.

He just bombed his car.

Him:That car is the one I mostly used to attend the jobs.I just had to let go

Me:I have a feeling this is not the first car you have damaged

He shrugged

Him:This one was special though.

After spending a few hours with his friends we went home.

I was dog tired,I just went for a shower before going to check on my peacefully sleeping babies,then I went to our room to find Reece waiting for me in bed.

Me:You had fun.

I said as I got in and snuggling on his side

Him:Yeah,I'm gonna miss doing that.

Me:You sound like you debating with yourself you want to go back or something.

He sighed.

Him:It's not easy to just quit and forget about it,but I assure you that I'm not going back Okay ?

I nod

Me:Good.

Him:I love you.

Me:I love you more

Him:Hey that's supposed to be my line.

Me:Shut up.

Reece and I have been through alot,through it all we overcame any challenges thrown on our way.

It's been a long journey,it wasn't easy.

Given how we met,how he was,how I was.Here we were with our own family.

I know its not going to be easy,but as long as

we had each other.

The following morning I woke up to a note, Reece saying he's gone driving his grandma home.

I stretched out my sore arms. I got up and went to do my routine before going to the twins room which was next door.

Opening the door slowly to not wake them up on case they were sleeping. As my head peeked in, I held my hand to my mouth so that I wouldn't scream.

I stood frozen,, my blood running cold and my eyes wide open

A couple of feet away from me stood a man, in front of my babies cot. Wearing all black, he held one of the twins Rocking him back and forth, looking at his mischievous glint.

I debated whether to step forward and snatch

my babies away from him.

Me: W-who are you ?

I stuttered out while gulping in fear,he had this bad vibes more like dangerous vibe Oozing out.

The guy turned to look at me

Oh Shit!

Him:Your father in law,dear.

He smirked at me.

The End